THE American Scholar

William Robert Miller
IS THE CHURCH OBSOLETE?

Earl Rovit
JEWISH HUMOR AND AMERICAN LIFE

Anthony Burgess
LETTER FROM ENGLAND

Nathan Glazer
STUDENT POLITICS IN A DEMOCRATIC SOCIETY

Controversy: The Assassins by John Kaplan

SPRING 1967 / PRICE $1.50

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Vital and Varied...

THE PASSING OF THE HAPSBURG MONARCHY, 1914-1918
By Arthur J. May

The dramatic assassination of Archduke Ferdinand at Sarajevo opened the door to a tragic struggle which concluded with the disintegration of the curious dual empire of Austria-Hungary and radically altered the political configuration of central Europe. This work, the culmination of a lifetime of study and thought on the Hapsburg Monarchy, penetrates the theme of a recognized Great Power in its death throes.

1966 | 864 pp. | 2 Vols. Boxed | $18.00

LANGUAGE, LAW AND DIPLOMACY
A Study of Linguistic Diversity in Official International Relations and International Law
By Alexander Ostrower

A comprehensive study of the problems that arise in communications among nations particularly at the diplomatic level by a distinguished lawyer and linguist. "Ostrower's work is a welcome contribution to our knowledge of the effects of linguistic complexity and diversity upon international relations."—*Am. Polit. Sc. Rev.*

1965 | 963 pp. | 2 Vols. Boxed | $20.00

ANNALS OF ENGLISH DRAMA, 975-1700
By Alfred Harbage, Revised by S. Schoenbaum

The revised edition of a well-known reference volume. The book provides a chronological listing, as complete as knowledge permits, of plays, masques, and similar forms of entertainment devised in England or by Englishmen from the time of the earliest "Quem Quaeritis" trope in the tenth century until the death of Dryden in 1700.

1964 | 7½″ × 10″ | 321 pp. | $18.00

THE ORIGIN OF SPECIES BY CHARLES DARWIN
A Variorum Text
Edited by Morse Peckham

"An astonishing reference work by a dedicated scholar who provides a fascinating introduction . . . No future student can properly discuss the evolution of Darwin's ponderings without turning to this monumental source of detail."—*Eugenics Review*. Between 1859 and 1872, Darwin published six different texts of *The Origin of Species*. This is a complete variorum edition which covers all of the variants in the texts.

1959 | 816 pp. | $15.00

At your bookseller or

UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA PRESS, Philadelphia 19104

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

KEEP UP WITH THE Times

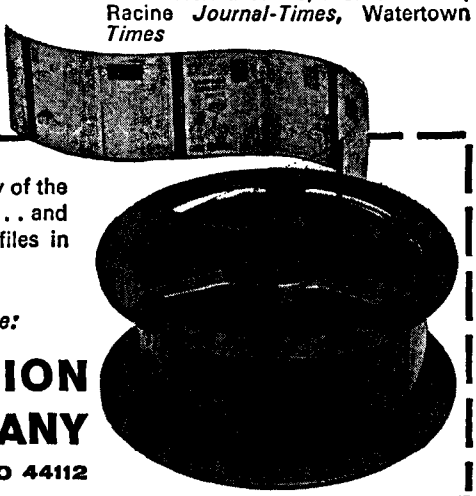
...we have 83 of them on microfilm!

(among the 900 dailies from Seattle to St. Petersburg—and from Bangor to San Antonio —all microfilmed by us on a continuing basis)

Why do so many newspapers choose Micro Photo to preserve their newspapers on microfilm?

We like to think it's because we've proven in 20 years of service microfilming that quality is important . . . and archival quality microfilm is the only kind we supply to our newspaper and library customers.

Cullman *Times*, Florence *Times*, Gadsden *Times*, Huntsville *Times*, Selma *Times-Journal*, *Northwest Arkansas Times*, Harrison *Times*, West Memphis *Times*, Escondido *Times-Advocate*, *Humboldt Times*, Los Angeles *Times*, Visalia *Times-Delta*, Danbury *News-Times*, Hartford *Times*, Trumbull *Times*, St. Petersburg *Times*, Tampa *Times*, Gainesville *Times*, Thomasville *Times-Enterprise*, Valdosta *Times*, McLeansboro *Times-Leader*, Ottawa *Republican-Times*, Streator *Times-Press*, Hammond *Times*, Kokomo *Times*, New Castle *Courier-Times*, Carroll *Times Herald*, Davenport *Times-Democrat*, Marshalltown *Times-Republican*, Leavenworth *Times*, Louisville *Times*, New Orleans *Times-Picayune*, Shreveport *Times*, Cumberland *Times*, Bay City *Times*, Port Huron *Times Herald*, St. Cloud *Times*, Greenville *Delta Democrat Times*, York *News-Times*, Bayonne *Times*, Trenton *Times*, Vineland *Times-Journal*, *Burlington County Times*, Albany *Times-Union*, Geneva *Times*, Glens Falls *Times*, Olean *Times-Herald*, Oswego *Palladium-Times*, Rochester *Times-Union*, Troy *Times Record*, Watertown *Times*, Asheville *Times*, Ashland *Times Gazette*, Cincinnati *Post & Times-Star*, Kenton *Times*, Marietta *Times*, Martins Ferry *Times-Leader*, New Philadelphia *Times*, Niles *Times*, Van Wert *Times-Bulletin*, Zanesville *Times Recorder*, Oklahoma *Times*, Leavittown *Times*, *Delaware County Times*, Gettysburg *Times*, Kittanning *Leader-Times*, Scranton *Times*, *Beaver County Times*, Orangeburg *Times & Democrat*, Chattanooga *Times*, Kingsport *Times*, Houston *Times*, Newport News *Times-Herald*, Pulaski *Southwest Times*, Richmond *Times-Dispatch*, Roanoke *Times*, Seattle *Times*, Fairmont, West Virginia *Times*, Weirton *Times*, Manitowoc *Herald-Times*, Monroe *Times*, Racine *Journal-Times*, Watertown *Times*



Subscribe to the microfilm editions of these or any of the over 900 newspapers we preserve on microfilm . . . and you can also acquire complete microfilm backfiles in most cases.

For complete information and catalog, write:

MICRO PHOTO DIVISION
BELL & HOWELL COMPANY
1700 SHAW AVENUE • CLEVELAND, OHIO 44112

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Wilma Marsh was a "nurse" when she was seven.

Now she's a nurse...for real...at General Motors.

There was a big difference between playing nurse and Wilma Marsh's first day as a nurse's aide at St. Joseph's Hospital in Flint, Michigan. When ordered to give a patient a bath, she fainted. Coming out of it, Wilma heard the doctor's remark, "This kid is never going to make it as a nurse."

That's when she made up her mind. *"Wilma will make it!"*

That was some 12 years ago, and Wilma has been in nursing ever since. Upon graduation from St. Joseph's she worked there for about 10 years.

Now she's a full-time nurse at one of the Buick plant's 12 medical stations.

Her work is providing on-the-spot nursing service to employes with medical problems. Like all GM nurses, Wilma works under a doctor's guidance. She is well trained, capable, experienced and dedicated to her profession.

It's a nice feeling to have skilled nurses like Wilma Marsh in General Motors plants—always at hand whenever needed.

GM

MARK OF EXCELLENCE

General Motors is people making better things for you.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

THE

American Scholar

A QUARTERLY FOR THE INDEPENDENT THINKER

PUBLISHED FOR GENERAL CIRCULATION BY PHI BETA KAPPA

In the right state the scholar is *Man Thinking*
—EMERSON

Editorial Board

HANNAH ARENDT
JACQUES BARZUN
DANIEL BELL
RALPH ELLISON
ERIK H. ERIKSON
PHILIP P. HALLIE
AUGUST HECKSCHER
JOHN HERSEY
RICHARD HOFSTADTER
GERALD HOLTON
ALFRED KAZIN
HENRY A. MURRAY
WILLIAM M. ROTH
RICHARD H. ROVERE
HARLOW SHAPLEY

HIRAM HAYDN, *Editor*
WHITNEY J. OATES, *Consulting Editor*
JOSEPH WOOD KRUTCH, *Contributing Editor*
MARY MOORE MOLONY, *Managing Editor*
JUDITH MICHAELS BETSY BRANDRIFF ANNA SEVIER

DOROTHY KERR, *Director of Circulation and Promotion*
CARLEY STRAUGHAN LISA McAULIFFE MARILYN HOFF

Advertising Representative: MRS. WILLIAM A. JAMES, 217 Canner Street, New Haven, Connecticut 06511

Published quarterly since 1932 by the United Chapters of Phi Beta Kappa. Printed by The William Byrd Press, Inc., 2901 Byrdhill Road, Richmond, Virginia 23205. Second-class postage paid at Richmond, Virginia. Copyright © 1967 by the United Chapters of Phi Beta Kappa.

Send all change of address notices, undeliverable copies, subscription orders and other mail to *Editorial and Circulation Offices:* 1811 Q Street, N.W., Washington, D. C. 20009.

Subscription Rates: $1.50 a copy, $4.00 one year, $7.00 two years, $9.00 three years, foreign and Canadian $.50 a year additional for postage.

Unsolicited manuscripts must be accompanied by return postage. No responsibility is assumed for their loss or injury, or for the views expressed in articles published.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

THE NOVELS OF FLAUBERT

A Study of Themes and Techniques

By VICTOR BROMBERT

Through a probing study of Flaubert's novels which brings out their nuances of tone, technique, vision, and meaning, Victor Brombert provides a close and complex analysis of Flaubert's art in relation to his tragic themes. Avoiding undue emphasis on biography, Mr. Brombert focuses on the haunting motifs of the novels and analyzes the features which contribute to Flaubert's total vision, while respecting the integrity of each work and discussing each novel in its own terms. The vision of Flaubert emerges, showing his artistic relevance to his time and to our own. *320 pages. $7.50*

THE ART OF OSCAR WILDE

By EPIFANIO SAN JUAN, JR.

The art and life of Oscar Wilde present the kind of absurd and inverted paradox for which Wilde was justly admired. While posing as a sensualist desiring only to "drift with every passion," he produced works dominated by a horror of corruption and a pathetic yearning for lost innocence. While posing as a languid dilittante, he wrote poems, novels, and plays which reveal the formal structure and conscious craftsmanship of a dedicated artist. Mr. San Juan focuses on Wilde's works, analyzes their genres and techniques, and relates them to formal conventions and intellectual history. *235 pages. $6.50*

MATTHEW ARNOLD

The Poet as Humanist

By G. ROBERT STANGE

Arnold is among the most inaccessible of 19th-century poets, a fact of which he himself was well aware. Through a close and sustained reading of many individual poems, Mr. Stange finds that Arnold organized his examination of life around these central ideas: poetry, nature, self, and love. *320 pages. $6.95*

WILLIAM PENN

Politics and Conscience

By MARY MAPLES DUNN

This is a concise, fluently presented examination of the relation between William Penn's religious convictions and his political behavior from his years as an active young convert to the Quaker cause to his later years as governor of Pennsylvania. The study presents new insights into Penn's life based on many ignored but important pamphlets that he wrote. *224 pages. $6.00*

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

THOMAS SHERIDAN OF SMOCK-ALLEY

By ESTHER SHELDON

This account of Thomas Sheridan's career as theater manager has been based on biographies written by his contemporaries, on 18th-century newspapers and pamphlets, and on letters written to and by Sheridan. The author also gives us much new information about Sheridan's relations with David Garrick. In an appendix, the author has included a Smock-Alley Calendar, giving a daily record of performances and casts. Most of the material in the Calendar has not been collected before and should be invaluable to theater historians. *575 pages. Illus. $12.50*

A HISTORY OF ANGLO-LATIN LITERATURE 597-1066

Vol. I: 597-740; Vol. II (in preparation): 740-1066

By W. F. BOLTON

Taking as its chronological and geographical limits the period and area of Anglo-Saxon domination, this study provides a guide to the Latin literature that existed alongside the vernacular. A very full bibliography is keyed to the text discussions. *June. 348 pages. $12.50*

TRANSFORMATIONS IN LATE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY ART

By ROBERT ROSENBLUM

The importance of the late eighteenth century in the genesis of modern art emerges in these four essays on various aspects of the art and architecture of a neglected period. Such diverse matters as the emotional and stylistic flexibility of Neoclassicism, the emergence of Historicism, the rapport between politics and the new moralizing art, and the search for a radical formal purity are considered. Many works of art previously unpublished, and sometimes even unphotographed, make their first appearance here. *240 pages. 215 illus. $10.00*

THE SECRET CITY

A History of Race Relations in the Nation's Capital

By CONSTANCE McLAUGHLIN GREEN

Washington has always had a large Negro community, existing as a city within a city, which has played a prominent role in the development of the nation's capital. Mrs. Green, a Pulitzer-Prize winning author, records the relations between this traditionally large Negro community and the minority of white Washingtonians from the city's founding at the end of the 18th century to the beginning of the 1960's. *416 pages. Illus. $8.50*

Princeton University Press

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Cornell
UNIVERSITY PRESS

LITANIES AND LEGISLATORS

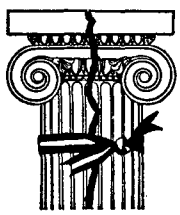
Religion, Politics, and Diversity

The Church-State Theme in New York History

By JOHN WEBB PRATT. This timely and judicious study is the first history of church-state relations in a major state from the earliest beginnings to the present. It delineates the roots of religious conviction and conduct and their relation to government during New York's colonial era, defines the church-state settlement worked out during the Revolution, and examines the 19th-century problems of religious freedom, education, and the public welfare. The author concludes with a discussion of how New York's leaders are dealing with conflicts in our own time.

336 pages. $7.50

ANTIFEDERALIST PAPERS



The Eleventh Pillar

New York State and the Federal Constitution

By LINDA GRANT DEPAUW. Winner of the 1964 Beveridge Award of the American Historical Association. This book is the first full-length work to deal exclusively with the contest over New York's ratification of the Constitution. The author challenges the theory that social and economic differences motivated the struggle. She argues convincingly that Antifederalism, in New York State at least, was compatible with a strong attachment to the Union and a sincere desire to augment the power of the federal government.

288 pages, map. $6.50

THE SUN SETS ON LLOYD GEORGE

The Downfall of the Liberal Party, 1914-1935

By TREVOR WILSON. Partisan accounts of the fall of the Liberal Party in England have rendered the real story almost unintelligible. Now, Trevor Wilson sets the record straight. Making full use of contemporary newspapers and periodicals, as well as the private letters and published memoirs of the significant figures of the time, the author traces this important chapter in England's history. "Mr. Trevor Wilson's book, with its careful analysis of characters, policies, and elections can be pressed upon all students of the period."—*The Sunday Times* (London)

416 pages, photographs. $7.50

Cornell University Press
ITHACA, NEW YORK 14850

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

THE LETTERS OF HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW

Volume I, 1814-1836; Volume II, 1837-1843

Edited by ANDREW HILEN

Volumes I and II of this projected multi-volume edition include all of Longfellow's extant letters, many previously unpublished, for the period 1814-1843. Scrupulously annotated and restored, they reveal the man as far more than the mild and studied figure of tradition. *Belknap Press.* Illus., 2 vols. $25.00

ROYALL TYLER

By G. THOMAS TANSELLE

In the first book-length study of Royall Tyler (1757-1826), the author provides an account of the life and legal activities of the distinguished Vermont jurist and discusses his plays, poems, novel, and essays, focusing on their contribution to a native American literature. $7.50

THE SPIRIT OF THE GHETTO

By HUTCHINS HAPGOOD

Edited by MOSES RISCHIN

To an extent unequalled by any outsider before him, Hutchins Hapgood, a New England Yankee, succeeded in penetrating the inner life of an American immigrant community—New York's Yiddish ghetto. This edition of his classic work which has been largely neglected since its publication in 1902, includes the original illustrations by Jacob Epstein and an affectionate introduction by Moses Rischin. *A John Harvard Library Book.* $5.95

THE PROCESS OF GOVERNMENT

By ARTHUR F. BENTLEY

Edited by PETER H ODEGARD

The Process of Government, an extraordinarily original introduction to interest group analysis in political science, was written in 1908 by Arthur F. Bentley, a pioneer in contemporary behavioral science. Largely ignored for two decades, the book is now generally regarded as a seminal contribution to modern political analysis. *A John Harvard Library Book.* $6.95

HARVARD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

THE BENEVOLENT MAN

A Life of Ralph Allen of Bath

By BENJAMIN BOYCE

Ralph Allen of Bath (1693-1764), the original of "Squire Allworthy" in Fielding's *Tom Jones*, was a fine example of the benevolent man, the type of generous, amiable Christian gentleman often idealized in eighteenth-century prose. This first complete account of his many-faceted life provides, in addition, a history of Bath during its inception as a fashionable spa. $7.95

THE WILBERFORCES AND HENRY MANNING

The Parting of Friends

By DAVID NEWSOME

Samuel, Robert, and Henry Wilberforce, with their brother-in-law Henry Manning, are the central figures in this powerful narrative of religious conflict in early Victorian England. The author portrays the buoyant hopes of this influential circle before Newman's secession to Catholicism and its tragic dissolution in the years that followed. "Learned and brilliant study . . ."—*The Sunday Times* (London). *Belknap Press.* $12.00

THE ITALIAN FOLLOWERS OF CARAVAGGIO

By ALFRED MOIR

In his short career Michaelangelo Merisi da Caravaggio (1573-1610) gained recognition as one of the leading painters of the day, and his work inspired a movement that became for a time one of the most influential in Western Europe. This heavily illustrated work is the first comprehensive study of the phenomenon of Caravaggism in Italy. 403 illus. 2 vols. $30.00

THE CRUSADER KINGDOM OF VALENCIA

Reconstruction on a Thirteenth-Century Frontier

By ROBERT IGNATIUS BURNS, SJ.

In this comprehensive history, Father Burns examines the pervasive secular role of the church in the Christian consolidation of the land during the half century following the collapse of the Moslem kingdom of Valencia and relates the dramatic, turbulent, and sometimes tragic story of the advance of the medieval frontier. Illus. 2 vols. $18.50

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

AMERICANS AND THE SOVIET EXPERIMENT, 1917-1933

By PETER G. FILENE

The fateful agitation, confusion, and fascination felt by Americans about the Soviet Union prior to American recognition are examined here in all their vividly contradictory manifestations. This perceptive interpretative analysis offers new insight into the controversial concept of "national character." Illustrated. $7.95

DANILEVSKY

A Russian Totalitarian Philosopher

By ROBERT E. MacMASTER

In this study of Nicholas Danilevsky, biologist, statistician, colleague of Dostoevsky in the Fourierist Petrashevsky circle, and author of the Panslavist work *Russia and Europe*, Mr. MacMaster takes issue with previous interpretations of Danilevsky's philosophy and, in the process, casts light on the development of the modern Russian radical mind. *Russian Research Center Studies, 53.* $7.95

FARM POLICIES AND POLITICS IN THE TRUMAN YEARS

By ALLEN J. MATUSOW

In the years immediately following World War II, Mr. Matusow relates the process by which the government overcame internal political disharmony and the alienation of the farmers to save Europe from famine. Included is an assessment of the role of the farm issues in the 1948 election and the origin and ultimate defeat of the controversial Brannan Plan. *Harvard Historical Studies, 80.* $7.50

TRADE AND EMPIRE

The British Customs Service in Colonial America, 1660-1775

By THOMAS C. BARROW

Mr. Barrow presents the first analysis of the operation and organization of the colonial customs service from its inception in 1673 to its collapse in 1775. His study of the institution that was one of the chief causes of colonial discontent sheds new light on a pivotal era in Anglo-American history. $8.00

HARVARD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

LI TA-CHAO AND THE ORIGINS OF CHINESE MARXISM

By MAURICE MEISNER

This is the only full Western treatment of the man who first undertook the adaptation of Marxism to the Chinese historical environment. An associate of Mao's at Peking University in 1918-1919, Li Ta-Chao was executed by Chiang Kai-shek in 1927. He is honored today as Communist China's first true leader and its greatest martyr. *Harvard East Asian Series, 27.* $4.95

FOUNDATIONS OF CONSTITUTIONAL GOVERNMENT IN MODERN JAPAN, 1868-1900

By GEORGE AKITA

The author takes sharp issue with traditional interpretations of Meiji constitutional development and, utilizing a vast body of sources, presents a fresh, authoritative, and unusually comprehensive analysis of this key period in Japanese political history. *Harvard East Asian Series, 23.* $8.50

POLITICAL THOUGHT IN EARLY MEIJI JAPAN, 1868-1889

By JOSEPH PITTAU, SJ.

Incorporating new materials only recently made available by the Japanese Government and private sources, this book shows that ambivalent elements permeating the ideas of the Meiji leaders produced a principle of constitutionalism adulterated by absolutist doctrines and mythical traditions. *Harvard East Asian Series, 24.* $6.95

THRONE AND MANDARINS

China's Search for a Policy During the Sino-French Controversy, 1880-1885

By LLOYD E. EASTMAN

This diplomatic history provides new insights into the character and historical significance of China's policy-making procedures in the late 19th century, and adds a new dimension to the historian's understanding of China's response to the West. *Harvard Historical Studies, 79.* $6.00

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

STYLE AND TEMPER

Studies in French Fiction, 1925-1960

By W. M. FROHOCK

This collection of critical papers on such French novelists as Montherlant, Malraux, Camus, and Sartre argues that their achievement was largely technical and explores their literary devices and objectives. A final chapter contrasts recent innovations as represented in the work of Butor and Robbe-Grillet. $3.95

RIMBAUD'S POETIC PRACTICE

Image and Theme in the Major Poems

By W. M. FROHOCK

"The service Professor Frohock has done the reader is a great one."—*The French Review.* "Provides a welcome corrective to the common representations of the poet. . ."—*Saturday Review.* "An invaluable contribution to the aesthetic study of modern French poetry."—*Virginia Quarterly Review.* $5.00

THE POETRY OF VISION

Five Eighteenth-Century Poets

By PATRICIA MEYER SPACKS

The 18th-century English writers James Thomson, William Collins, Thomas Gray, Christopher Smart, and William Cowper have often been neglected, and it is as a corrective to this neglect that Mrs. Spacks provides thorough analyses of the work of each of these poets from a contemporary viewpoint. $6.50

THE VOCAL SONGS IN THE PLAYS OF SHAKESPEARE

A Critical History

By PETER J. SENG

Presenting authoritative texts for the songs found in the plays of Shakespeare and discussing their sources, Mr. Seng provides a critical history of the songs from 1709 to the present, considers their dramatic function, and locates the scores in modern editions. $8.95

HARVARD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Which degree counts most?

Besides a B.S., M.S., M.B.A., Ph.D.—or what have you—there are other degrees vital to your future. The degree of imagination. Ambition. Responsibility.

If you have them in good measure, we know of no company better able, or more disposed, to reward them. Handsomely. In terms of professional recognition, intellectually stimulating environment, and material reward.

We're big. But we're still young and growing. And plan to keep on. In 1965, for example, our sales rose 23%. To over $860 million. And 516 million in the first half of '66.

We need top-notch people who can grow with us. People who are well trained in chemistry, physics, chemical, electrical, or mechanical engineering, marketing or finance.

And who have that extra degree.

Talk it over with your faculty and Placement Officer. And regardless of your military commitments, be sure to see our representative when he is on your campus. Or write to: John B. Kuhn, Manager of University Recruitment, Celanese Corporation, 522 Fifth Avenue, New York, N.Y. 10036.

CELANESE

AN EQUAL OPPORTUNITY EMPLOYER

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

THE AMERICAN SCHOLAR

Volume 36 *Spring, 1967* Number 2

CONTENTS

IF YOU DON'T MIND MY SAYING SO — *Joseph Wood Krutch* — 186

The Reach of Imagination — *J. Bronowski* — 193

Student Politics in a Democratic Society — *Nathan Glazer* — 202

To a Scholar in the Stacks, *Poem* — *Howard Nemerov* — 218

The Seventh Fold, *Poem* — *J. Donald Adams* — 220

Is the Church Obsolete?: The Crisis of Religion in a Secular Age — *William Robert Miller* — 221

Jewish Humor and American Life — *Earl Rovit* — 237

Science, A Wellspring of Our Discontent — *Walter Orr Roberts* — 246

LETTER FROM ENGLAND — *Anthony Burgess* — 261

Status, *Poem* — *Robert Leslie Conly* — 265

INTERVIEW
W. H. Auden — *Polly Platt* — 266

CONTROVERSY
The Assassins — *John Kaplan* — 271

THE REVOLVING BOOKSTAND
Reviews by *Henry A. Murray, A. M. Tibbetts* and *Edward T. Chase* — 308

THE READER REPLIES — 335

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

THE COLONIZER AND THE COLONIZED

By Albert Memmi
With an introduction by Jean-Paul Sartre
(BP#232; $1.95)
A French North African's philosophical appraisal of the relentless reciprocity which binds the colonizer to the colonized.

A HISTORY OF THE BIBLE

By Fred Gladstone Bratton
(BP#239; $2.45)
"I know of no other single volume covering all of the material essential for an introduction of the Bible through the historical method." — Daniel Poling in *Christian Herald.*

THE NEW STUDENT LEFT

Edited by Mitchell Cohen and Dennis Hale
(BP#240; $1.95)
The campus radicals' own statements of their positions — with a new essay by Stokely Carmichael entitled "What We Want."

THE POPULAR ARTS

By Stuart Hall and Paddy Whannel
(BP#241; $2.95)
A comprehensive guide to the use and impact of mass media, by two English educators.
"Close to invaluable."
— *The Reporter.*

THE THREE PILLARS OF ZEN

By Philip Kapleau
(BP#242; $2.45)
"A remarkable book that is certain to assume a permanent place in the library of Zen literature in Western languages."
— Huston Smith.

NEW BEACON PAPERBACKS

SPRING 1967:
ADVANCE SHIPMENTS
FEBRUARY 15

Plus seven impressive volumes from the vastly significant Daedalus library, focusing over 100 of the world's greatest minds on topics of special contemporary significance:

A NEW EUROPE?

Edited by Stephen R. Graubard
(BP#247; $3.45)

THE PROFESSIONS IN AMERICA

Edited by Kenneth S. Lynn
(BP#248; $1.95)

THE WOMAN IN AMERICA

Edited by Robert Jay Lifton
(BP#249; $2.45)

SCIENCE AND CULTURE

Edited by Gerald Holton
(BP#250; $2.45)

UTOPIAS AND UTOPIAN THOUGHT

Edited by Frank E. Manuel
(BP#251; $2.45)

THE CONTEMPORARY UNIVERSITY: U.S.A.

Edited by Robert S. Morison
(BP#252; $2.45)

THE NEGRO AMERICAN

Edited by Talcott Parsons and Kenneth B. Clark
With a Foreword by Lyndon B. Johnson
(BP#253; $3.95)

Specify the course for which you are considering any one of these exceptional volumes, and you may obtain a free examination copy from any college-area bookstore participating in the BEACON CAMPUS PLAN, or directly from BEACON PRESS • BOSTON 02108

NAVAHO WITCHCRAFT

By Clyde Kluckhohn
(BP#243; $1.95)
"In this book, we find the rare combination of a first-class field worker and of a thinker." — Claude Levi-Strauss.

THE OPINIONMAKERS

By William L. Rivers
(BP#244; $1.95)
"The subtle and baffling complexities of the press as it covers Washington politics . . . who the real makers of opinion are, how great their influence is, and what the tricks of the trade are." — James F. Fixx, in *Saturday Review.*

VOICES IN THE CLASSROOM

By Peter Schrag
(BP#245; $2.25)
A from-the-scene report on local school politics, problems and progress in 10 representative school systems across the country.

ABSENTEE OWNERSHIP

By Thorstein Veblen
(BP#246; $2.95)
The contemporary introduction by Robert Lekachman casts new light on this culminative work by one of America's most significant original economic thinkers.

VIETNAM: THE LOGIC OF WITHDRAWAL

By Howard Zinn
(BP#254; $1.25)
Published simultaneously with the hardcover original, here is a studied rebuke of America's Vietnam policy by the brilliant author of *SNCC: THE NEW ABOLITIONISTS.*

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

FREE EXAMINATION COPIES OF BEACON PAPERBACK BOOKS

are available to qualified teachers at these and other college-area stores participating in the Beacon Campus Plan. Since a number of stores have joined the plan since this list of "charter members" was prepared, we suggest that you inquire at your bookstore whether it is listed here or not.

ALABAMA
Athens: Athens College Bookstore
Auburn: Anders Bookstore
Birmingham: Samford Univ. Bookstore
Decatur: The Book Mark
Florence: Anderson Book and Gift Shop
Homewood: Hawkins Bookstore
Huntsville: Andan's Bookstore
Bookland
Jasper: Jasper Book Store
People's Drug Company
Montevallo: Alabama College Bookstore
Troy: Troy State College Bookstore
Tuscaloosa: Alabama Bookstore

CALIFORNIA
Berkeley: Campus Textbook Exchange
Fresno: Dodgson Book Center
Los Altos: Keplers Books and Magazines
Menlo Park: Keplers Books and Magazines

CONNECTICUT
Fairfield: Campus Center
Storrs: Univ. of Connecticut Bookstore

DELAWARE
Newark: Univ. of Delaware Bookstore

DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA
Washington: Catholic Univ. of America Campus Store
Discount Book Store
George Washington Univ. Bookstore
Savile Book Shop, Inc.

FLORIDA
Tallahassee: Bills Book Store

GEORGIA
Athens: College Book Store, Inc.
Atlanta: Atlanta Book Mart
Book Shop, Inc.
Candler's Bookstore
Emory Univ. Stores
Engineer's Bookstore
Georgia State College Bookstore
Johnny Reb's Book Shop
Presbyterian Bookstore
Clarkston: Georgia College Stores
Decatur: Agnes Scott College Book Store
Douglas: South Georgia College Bookstore
Forest Park: The Eller News Center
Fort Valley: Ft. Valley State College Bookstore

ILLINOIS
Galesburg: Knox College Bookstore
Rock Island: Readmore Book World

IOWA
Cedar Rapids: Coe College Bookstore

MAINE
Biddeford: St. Francis College Bookstore

MARYLAND
Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Univ. Book Store
College Park: Maryland Book Exchange

MASSACHUSETTS
Boston: Boston Univ. Bookstore
Kenmore Stationers
Northeastern Univ. Bookstore
Student Book Exchange
Univ. of Mass. at Boston Bookstore
Cambridge: Harvard Cooperative Society
Norton: Wheaton College Bookstore

MICHIGAN
Detroit: Campus Books, Inc.
College Park Artists Supply
Merit Book Center
East Lansing: Student Book Store
Escanaba: Canterbury Bookstore
Grand Rapids: Grand Rapids Jr. College Bookstore
Highland Park: Highland Park News Company
Kalamazoo: University Bookstores
Mt. Pleasant: Student Book Exchange
Olivet: The Bookstore at Olivet College
Traverse City: Horizon Bookstore

MINNESOTA
Northfield: Carleton Book Store

NEBRASKA
Omaha: Creighton Campus Store

NEW HAMPSHIRE
Durham: Univ. of New Hampshire Bookstore

NEW JERSEY
Madison: Drew University Bookstore

NEW YORK
Bronx: NYU Bookstore (north campus)
Buffalo: State Univ. College Store
Fredonia: Faculty Student Ass'n Bookstore
Hempstead: Paperback Bookseller
New York City: City College Bookstore
NYU Bookstores
Papyrus Booksellers, Inc.
Salter's Book Center
Niagara Falls: Niagara Univ. Campus Bookstore
Plattsburgh: S.U.N.Y. at Plattsburgh Bookstore
Rochester: St. John Fisher College Bookstore

NORTH CAROLINA
Chapel Hill: Intimate Book Shop
Durham: The Book Exchange
Winston-Salem: Wake Forest College Book Store

OHIO
Alliance: Mt. Union College Bookstore
Berea: Baldwin Wallace College Bookstore
Bowling Green: Bee Gee Bookstore
Cleveland: Cleveland Textbook Stores, Inc.
Granville: Denison Univ. Bookstore
Hiram: Hiram College Bookstore
Oberlin: Co-op Bookstore
Wooster: Wooster College Bookstore

PENNSYLVANIA
Huntingdon: Juniata College Bookstore
Philadelphia: Houston Hall Store
Pennsylvania Book Center
Temple Univ. Student Store
Selinsgrove: Susquehanna Univ. Campus Book Store

RHODE ISLAND
Providence: Brown Univ. Store

SOUTH CAROLINA
Columbia: South Carolina Book Store
Tigerville: North Greenville Jr. College Bookstore

TENNESSEE
Sewanee: University Supply Store

TEXAS
Commerce: Arthur's Student Co-op Store

VIRGINIA
Charlottesville: Newcomb Hall Book Store
Radford: Radford College Book Store
Richmond: Beacon Book Store

WEST VIRGINIA
Wheeling: Wheeling College Bookstore

BEACON PRESS • BOSTON 02108

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

TWELVE NEW STANFORD PAPERBACKS

African Socialism

Edited by William H. Friedland and Carl G. Rosberg. "A handy guide to a very diffuse and elusive subject . . . A valuable work of reference."—The Annals. "An extremely useful study."—The Journal of Politics. $2.95

Eight Philosophers of the Italian Renaissance

Paul Oskar Kristeller. "A very useful and lucid book which is sure to be popular both with students and with the general reader."—The New York Review of Books. $2.45

Shapes of Philosophical History

Frank E. Manuel. "Covers no less than the entire field of philosophical and religious theories of history in the Western world . . . Written in a style both elegant and witty."—The Nation. $1.95

Marxism in the Modern World

Edited by Milorad M. Drachkovitch. "An excellent, well-written, and wide-ranging introduction admirably suited for the layman and the undergraduate." —The American Political Science Review. $2.95

Continuity and Change in Latin America

Edited by John J. Johnson. "A substantial contribution to the recent history of Latin America. . . . Deserves a warm welcome from all students and teachers of Latin American history."—The American Historical Review. $2.95

The British Political System

André Mathiot. "M. Mathiot's learned and perceptive study is a genuine enrichment of our literature in this field."—World Affairs. "Must take its place among the top few dealing with the British political system."—The Cresset. $2.95

The Mind of the Oxford Movement

Edited by Owen Chadwick. "Invaluable anthology and illuminating introduction."—The Personalist. "A better one-volume alternative to understanding the Oxford Movement is unavailable."—The Living Church. $2.65

André Malraux and the Tragic Imagination

W. M. Frohock. "Penetrating, lucid, fair . . . Every page is precise, meaningful, suggestive. . . . There is pungency, subtlety, delicacy, and art in [Frohock's] style."—Henri Peyre, The Romanic Review. $1.95

The Jacksonian Persuasion

POLITICS AND BELIEF. Marvin Meyers. "Its analysis is sustained, perceptive, precise, and its sublety of content is matched by lucidity of expression. . . . A book of rare distinction."—The American Political Science Review $1.95

Origins of the Medieval World

William Carroll Bark. "A joy to read . . . Much of this book can be read with profit and excitement by intelligent undergraduates. The professional historian will find broad questions to ponder."—The American Historical Review. $1.65

James Fenimore Cooper

A BIOGRAPHICAL AND CRITICAL STUDY. James Grossman. "The one biography of Cooper which most needed writing. . . . A near perfect meeting of author and critic."—Saturday Review. $2.95

Elizabethans at Home

Lu Emily Pearson. "The encyclopedic nature of this work makes it a positive gold mine of rich and varied information. . . . An exceedingly useful work."—The Journal of Modern History. $3.75

STANFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The Death of Tinker Bell

The American Theatre in the 20th Century

Joseph Golden

The six informal essays in this book provide for the thoughtful theatregoer an unusual view of the forces that have affected theatre in contemporary America.

Golden surveys the historical role of the theatre in American society as background for his analysis of the social, economic, and philosophical factors that contribute to the erosion of our present-day theatre.

His discussion of the works of our major playwrights considers the influence of their unsuccessful as well as their successful plays on the nature of 20th century theatre. Turning his attention to the most recent trends, he explores the salutary effect some of the "anti" signs—such as the Theatre of Cruelty, and Happenings—may have in clearing the way for the eventual emergence of a true American theatre.

$5.00

Teachers and Politics in France

A Pressure Group Study of the Federation de l'Education Nationale

James M. Clark

The FEN is the principal teachers' organization in France, a federation of the various unions of educators that includes almost all elementary school teachers, most secondary school teachers, and many university professors.

This is a study of the goals, the personnel, and the techniques of the FEN as an active political pressure group.

$6.50

De Gaulle and the World

The Foreign Policy of the Fifth French Republic

W. W. Kulski

"This is a scholarly documentation of de Gaulle's foreign policy since he became President of France. It examines thoroughly his character as a charismatic leader, his political philosophy, and especially the policies that have led him to a middle course between and outside the U.S. versus the U.S.S.R. confrontation.

Mr. Kulski's study is a sympathetic though quite objective contribution to the understanding of a complex man. It should be required reading for anyone studying foreign policy. Highly recommended."—*Library Journal*

$8.50

From your bookseller or

Syracuse University Press / Syracuse, New York 13210

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

If You Don't Mind My Saying So. . . . . .

JOSEPH WOOD KRUTCH

I am, I hope, not insensitive to any of the arts. I have spent happy hours in museums, and I listen with pleasure to Bach, Mozart and Beethoven. But I have more confidence in my ability to understand what is said in words than I have in my understanding of anything that dispenses with them. Such opinions as I hold concerning modern music or modern painting are as tentative as those I once expressed in these pages about modern architecture.

Nevertheless, as I said on that occasion, it is one of the privileges of the essayist to hold forth on subjects he doesn't know much about. Because he does not pretend to any expertness, those who know better than he what he is talking about need be no more than mildly exasperated. His misconceptions may give valuable hints to those who would set him right. If he didn't expose his obtuseness, his would-be mentors wouldn't know so well just what the misconceptions are and how they arose. An honest philistinism is easier to educate than the conscious or unconscious hypocrisy of those who admire whatever they are told that they should.

In the case of modern painting, the very fact that I can take pleasure in some of the works of yesterday's *avant-garde* but little in that of my own day suggests, even to me, that I may be merely the victim of a cultural lag. But there is no use in pretending that I am delighted by what delights me not, and I find that much serious criticism of the most recent painting is no help. Those who write it are talking over my head; they just don't start far enough back.

For instance, I read in the *Nation* that what a certain painter I had never heard of had accomplished during the war might be summarized as "an unstructured painterliness—neither expressionist nor surrealist in character, and therefore out of keeping with available alternatives." Shortly after the war "he followed through with an intimation of the picture facade as its own reason for being, preferring a unitary sensation, by being irregularly blotted out by masses that kept on pushing at, and disappearing past, the perimeters. Executed on a vastness of scale quite unprecedented in easel painting (which he was in any event attacking), these paintings sidestep drawing and the illusion of spatial recession without ever giving the impression of evasiveness. The result was a sense of the picture surface—now extraordinarily flattened—as a kind of wall whereby constricted elements no longer had any exclusive formal relationship with one another."

When I read things like that my first impulse is to exclaim, "If that young man expresses himself in terms too deep for me . . ." But then I realize the possibility that the words do say something to those whose visual perceptions are better trained than mine. I am at best a second grader, still struggling with the multiplication table, who has wandered into a seminar at the Institute for Advanced Studies.

When, therefore, I happened to see an advertisement of the Book-of-the-Month Club explaining that the Metropolitan Museum of Art had been persuaded to

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

prepare a twelve-part seminar on art, which could be subscribed to for "only $60," I had the feeling that this might very well be getting down to my level. The advertisement was adorned by reproductions of two contrasting pictures: one of the Metropolitan's own "Storm" (or "Paul and Virginia") by Pierre Cot, and the other of a swirling abstraction. "Which of these is a good painting?" demanded the headline. My immediate answer was "Neither." And I was not too much discouraged by the fact that I was pretty sure this was not the right answer.

I think I know at least some of the reasons why "The Storm" is not one of the great masterpieces—even though some supposedly competent expert must have once paid a whopping price for it. On the other hand, I had not the slightest idea why the abstraction was good or even just not quite as bad as the supposedly horrid example facing it.

I confess that I did not subscribe to the seminars. But I did borrow a set from an acquaintance who had done so, and I must report that I did understand what the Metropolitan people were saying as I had not understood the *Nation* critic. But I was not by any means wholly convinced. Many years ago I read Roger Fry on "Significant Form" and the terrible-tempered Albert Barnes on *The Art in Painting*. I found nothing in the Metropolitan seminar that was not this doctrine somewhat updated, and I was no more convinced than I had been by the earlier critics that what they were talking about was indeed the only thing in painting worth talking about, or that significant form by itself (if that is possible) was as good as, if not better than, classical paintings in which equally significant form had been imposed upon subject matters themselves interesting or moving in one way or another. In that problem lies the real crux of the matter. Granted that "composition," "significant form," or whatever you want to call it is a *sine qua non* of great painting, is it also the one thing necessary? Is it *the* art in painting or only *an* art in painting? My mentors from the Metropolitan are by no means fanatical. They never themselves insist that subject matter, or the communication of an emotion in connection with it, is irrelevant in judging a picture. But unless my memory fails me, they never really face the question of the extent to which the painter who abandons the suggestion of a subject matter is to that extent lesser than one who at the same time tells a story, reveals a character or communicates an attitude.

The hopeful student is confronted at the very beginning with what seems to me this unanswered question. He is warned that "Whistler's Mother" was called by the artist "Arrangement in Grey and Black"—and let that be a lesson to you. You may think that your enjoyment of the picture derives from its "appealing likeness of the author's mother and from sentimental associations with old age," but "the *real* [italics in the original] subject is something else . . . We may ask whether the picture would be just as effective if we omitted the subject altogether . . . the abstract school of contemporary painting argues that subject matter is only something that gets in the way. It confuses the issue—the issue being pure expression by means of color, texture, line and shape existing in their own right and representing nothing at all."

Throughout the course, stress is laid again and again on the comparison between two seemingly very different pictures said to be similar, although I don't think they are ever said to be identical. For instance, Vermeer's "The Artist and His Studio" is compared with Picasso's "The Studio." "Picasso," I am told, "had sacrificed . . . the interest inherent in the objects comprising the picture . . . the fascination and variety of natural textures . . . the harmonies of flowing light, the satisfaction of building solid forms out of light and shape. What has he gained? . . . Complete freedom to manipulate the forms of his picture . . . The abstractionist would argue that the enjoyment of a picture like Picasso's 'The Studio' is more intense because it is purer than the enjoyment we take in Vermeer."

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Is "purer" the right adjective? Is it purer or merely thinner? To me the answer is quite plain and the same as that given to the proponents of pure poetry who argued that poetry is essentially only sound so that the most beautiful single line in French literature is Racine's *"La fille de Minos et de Pasiphaé,"* not because the genealogy of Phèdre was interesting but just because the sound of the words is delightful. The sound of "O frabjous day! Callooh! Callay!" is also delightful but I don't think it as good as, for instance, "No spring, nor summer beauty hath such grace,/ As I have seen in one autumnal face."

It is all very well to say that two pictures as different as those by Vermeer and Picasso are somewhat similar in composition and that to this extent they produce a somewhat similar effect. But to say that the total experience of the two is not vastly different is, so it seems to me, pure nonsense and so is the statement that the two experiences are equally rich.

The author of the seminar session just quoted seems himself to think so when he writes: "But we also contend that a painting is a projection of the personality of the man who painted it, and a statement of the philosophy of the age that produced it."

If that is true, then the painter who claims to be "painting nothing but paint" is either a very deficient painter or is, perhaps without knowing it, projecting his personality and making a statement of a philosophy of the age that produced it. He is doing that just as truly and just as inevitably as Whistler was doing more than an arrangement in black and grey. And if that also is true, then the way to understand what is most meaningful and significant in any modern painting is to ask what it is that the painter, consciously or not, is revealing about his personality and about the age that finds his philosophy and his personality congenial.

At least that much seems often to be admitted by admiring critics of certain painters not fully abstract but who seem to be interested primarily in pure form. Take, for instance, the case of Ferdinand Léger and his reduction of the whole visible world, including human beings, to what looks like mechanical drawings. Are they examples of pure form meaning nothing but themselves? Certainly they are not always so considered by admirers. When the painter died in 1955 the distinguished critic André Chastel wrote:

> From 1910 on, his views of cities with smoke-like zinc, his country scenes inspired as if by a woodchopper, his still lifes made as if of metal, clearly showed what always remained his inspiration: the maximum hardening of a world of objects, which he made firmer and more articulate than they are in reality. Sacrifice of color and nuance was total and line was defined with severity and a well-meaning aggressiveness, projecting his violent, cold Norman temperament. This revolution he consecrated himself to seemed rather simple—the exaltation of the machine age, which after 1920 dominated the western world.

To me it seems equally plain that even those who profess to paint nothing but paint are in fact doing a great deal more because they would not find anything of the sort to be the real aim of painting unless they had certain attitudes toward nature, toward society and toward man. What that attitude is cannot, I think, be very well defined without recourse to two words that I hate to use because they have become so fashionable and are so loosely tossed about. What these painters are expressing is the alienation of the existentialist. They no longer represent anything in the external world because they no longer believe that the world that exists outside of man in any way shares or supports human aspirations and values or has any meaning for him. They are determined, like the existential moralist, to go it alone. They do not believe that in nature there is anything inherently beautiful, just as the existentialist moralizer refuses to believe that there is any suggestion of moral values in the external universe. The great literature and painting of the past have almost invariably been founded upon assumptions the exact opposite of these.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

They expressed man's attempt to find beauty and meaning in an external world from which he was not alienated because he believed that both his aesthetic and his moral sense corresponded to something outside himself.

Salvador Dali (whom, in general, I do not greatly admire) once made the remark that Picasso's greatness consisted in the fact that he had destroyed one by one all the historical styles of painting. I am not sure that there is not something in that remark, and if there is, then it suggests that in many important respects Picasso is much like the workers in several branches of literature whose aim is to destroy the novel with the antinovel, the theater with the antitheater, and philosophy by philosophies that consist, like logical positivism and linguistic analysis, in a refusal to philosophize. They are all determined, as the surrealist André Breton once said he was, to "wring the neck of literature."

Having now convinced myself of all these things, I will crawl farther out on a limb and confess that I have often wondered if the new styles created by modern painters—pointillism, cubism, surrealism and the mechanism of Léger (to say nothing of op and pop)—ought not be regarded as gimmicks rather than actual styles. And to my own great astonishment I have discovered that Picasso himself believes, or did once believe, exactly that.

The luxurious French monthly *Jardin des Arts* published (March 1964) a long and laudatory article on Picasso in the course of which it cited "a text of Picasso on himself" which had been reproduced at various times but most recently in a periodical called *Le Spectacle du Monde* (November 1962). I translate as follows:

> When I was young I was possessed by the religion of great art. But, as the years passed, I realized that art as one conceived it up to the end of the 1880's was, from then on, dying, condemned, and finished and that the pretended artistic activity of today, despite all its superabundance, was nothing but a manifestation of its agony . . . Despite appearances our contemporaries have given their heart to the machine, to scientific discovery, to wealth, to the control of natural forces, and of the world . . . From that moment when art became no longer the food of the superior, the artist was able to exteriorize his talent in various sorts of experiments, in new formulae, in all kinds of caprices and fantasies, and in all the varieties of intellectual charlatanism . . .
>
> As for me, from cubism on I have satisfied these gentlemen [rich people who are looking for something extravagant] and the critics also with all the many bizarre notions which have come into my head and the less they understood the more they admired them . . . Today, as you know, I am famous and rich. But when I am alone with my soul, I haven't the courage to consider myself as an artist. In the great and ancient sense of that word, Greco, Titian, Rembrandt and Goya were great painters. I am only the entertainer of a public which understands its age.

Chirico is another modern painter who has said something very much like this. But enough of quotations. And to me it seems that Picasso said all that I have been trying to say, namely, that a picture somehow involved with the world of reality outside man is more valuable than one that has nothing to say about anything except the painter himself. What he calls painters "in the great and ancient sense of that word" were able to be such only because they were not alienated existentialists.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

New from the University of Chicago Press

The Notebooks for "Crime and Punishment"

Fyodor Dostoevsky

Edited and Translated by Edward Wasiolek

The Notebooks make available in English for the first time a complete rendering of Dostoevsky's sketches, variants, opinions, and random reflections on *Crime and Punishment*. Nowhere is Dostoevsky's concern with craft, style, and factual accuracy more apparent than in this record of the alternative ideas he worked with—the plans, actions, and scenes that were never used. Characterizations differ in important points from those given in the printed novel. In addition, this book includes eight pages of reproductions from the original manuscript. Most important, *The Notebooks* provides information that bears on critical points of interpretation. This is the first in a series. Future editions in English will include *The Notebooks* for: *The Idiot, The Possessed,* and *The Brothers Karamazov.*

1967 LC:66-23702
224 pages, illustrated $6.95

The Russian Revolution of 1905

The Workers' Movement and the Formation of Bolshevism and Menshevism

Solomon M. Schwarz

Translated by Gertrude Vakar

Hoover Institution Publications

This book covers that crucial period during 1905 when Social-Democrary emerged as a factor of consequence on the political scene, only to divide into the two parts that became Social-Democracy, on the one hand, and, on the other, the authoritarian labor movement that assumed the name of Communism. Solomon M. Schwarz was a Menshevik spokesman on labor affairs and a member of the Kerensky government. His new book, *The Russian Revolution of 1905,* is the first volume in a comprehensive series, "The History of Menshevism," that will alter the understanding of the Russian revolution. Under Leopold H. Haimson, surviving Menshevik leaders have co-operated to prepare memoirs, monographs, and other scholarly materials. English-language volumes in this series will include "The Making of a Workers' Revolution: Russian Social-Democracy, 1891-1903," by Allan Wildman, and "Menshevism under Soviet Rule," edited by Haimson.

1967 LC:66-20582 384 pages, $8.95

Towards a Pax Africana

A Study of Ideology and Ambition

Ali A. Mazrui

"Perhaps the most crucial aspect of the ethic of self-government in Africa lies in the *African's ambition to be his own policeman,*" writes the author of this lucid and dispassionate appraisal of African political thinking today. Released from the old order of *Pax Britannica,* Africans now zealously and jealously assume the task of keeping peace within their continent and of preserving it from further foreign intervention. Professor Mazrui describes their efforts to achieve this goal of self-pacification by examining such matters as the search for an African identity, the concept of racial sovereignty, the development of native political leadership, the Pan-African movement, and the attitudes and policies of African members of the United Nations. *Towards a Pax Africana* is a new volume in the "Nature of Human Society" series.

1967 LC:67-12232 277 pages, $5.95

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The Idea of the Humanities

and Other Essays, Critical and Historical

R. S. Crane

The first volume contains Crane's reflections on the nature and history of the humanistic arts from the early Renaissance to the present day—their scope, their role in education, and their changing character. The second volume, devoted to literary criticism and literary history, presents an extended inquiry into the principles of criticism followed by considerations of particular critics and by some of Crane's own studies of Jane Austen and Ernest Hemingway.

1967 LC:66-30214
Two volumes 712 pages, $15.00

The Limits of Symbolism

Studies of Five Modern French Poets

Bernard Weinberg

These essays are *analyses littéraires,* written over a period of two decades by a critic who is one of the acknowledged masters of this approach to the study of poetry. Mr. Weinberg's application of this method is certain to illuminate the poems and equally certain to be hotly discussed and debated. Baudelaire, Rimbaud, Mallarmé, Valéry, and Saint-John Perse are discussed, and the reader is invited to ask "not only what each one is, and how it is put together, but also what signs it contains of the appearance of the new poetry."

1967 LC:66-23703 480 pages, $10.00

The Relevance of Physics

Stanley L. Jaki

Re-examining the cultural split between science and the humanities, Stanley L. Jaki objectively traces the history of physics and documents the virtues and foibles of its practitioners and popularizers. He discusses the central themes of physical research; the relation of physics to biology, metaphysics, ethics, and theology; and the place of physics in general human culture. His argument that scientists as well as laymen need greater familiarity with the development of physical science will undoubtedly cause debate. No less interesting is his idea that science and the humanities are neither in conflict nor in full co-operation, but are fulfilling very different needs.

1966 LC:66-20583 604 pages, $12.50

The Play Theory of Mass Communication

William Stephenson

This major work presents a new theory of mass communication as fun and play—not informational, but attitudinal in essence. Stephenson's principles and procedures for the empirical study of the entertainment aspects of mass communication derive from Q-methodology, which is predicated largely on subjective rather than objective principles of measurement. Among varied applications of the theory included here are the Army-McCarthy hearings, Khrushchev's visit to the United States, and the concept of democracy. With this book the great themes of war, peace, charismatic leadership and national character can be intelligently explored and explained in terms of the theory of play.

1967 LC:66-23700 208 pages, $5.00

University of Chicago Press, Chicago 60637

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Art of the Kwakiutl Indians

AND OTHER NORTHWEST COAST TRIBES

Audrey Hawthorn. The superb illustrations and lucid text of this monumental volume illuminate the richly varied ceremonial art of the Kwakiutl Indians and neighboring coastal tribes. 416 pages, 1,020 illus., 32 pages in color. $25.00

Eskimo Masks

ART AND CEREMONY

Dorothy Jean Ray; photographs by Alfred A. Blaker. Reveals the extraordinary beauty and cultural significance of masterworks produced by Eskimo craftsmen. 256 pages, 70 illus., 12 in color. $12.50

The Greenland Ice Cap

Børge Fristrup. A noted Arctic explorer presents an absorbing account of the discovery and conquest of a vast ice world. 312 pages, over 100 photographs, 56 hand-tipped color plates, 23 maps and charts. $20.00

Alaska and Its History

Edited with an Introduction by Morgan B. Sherwood. Twenty-five distinguished historians and anthropologists survey Alaska's colorful history—from discovery to statehood. 528 pages, 15 illus., maps. $12.50

One Man's Gold Rush

A KLONDIKE ALBUM

Murray Morgan; photographs by E. A. Hegg. The exuberant text and period photographs capture the lusty spirit of the gold rush era, recreating the drama of the stampede to the Klondike. 224 pages, 150 illus., 2 maps. $10.95

Is Liberalism Dead?

AND OTHER ESSAYS

Max Savelle. A noted historian provides a lucid and penetrating discussion of the origins and growth of liberalism in America. 226 pages. $6.95

UNIVERSITY OF WASHINGTON PRESS

Seattle and London

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The Reach of Imagination

J. BRONOWSKI

FOR THREE THOUSAND YEARS, poets have been enchanted and moved and perplexed by the power of their own imagination. In a short and summary essay I can hope at most to lift one small corner of that mystery; and yet it is a critical corner. I shall ask, What goes on in the mind when we imagine? You will hear from me that one answer to this question is fairly specific: which is to say, that we can describe the working of the imagination. And when we describe it as I shall do, it becomes plain that imagination is a specifically *human* gift. To imagine is the characteristic act, not of the poet's mind, or the painter's, or the scientist's, but of the mind of man.

My stress here on the word *human* implies that there is a clear difference in this between the actions of men and those of other animals. Let me then start with a classical experiment with animals and children which Walter Hunter thought out in Chicago about 1910. That was the time when scientists were agog with the success of Ivan Pavlov in forming and changing the reflex actions of dogs, which Pavlov had first announced in 1903. Pavlov had been given a Nobel prize the next year, in 1904; although in fairness I should say that the award did not cite his work on the conditioned reflex, but on the digestive glands.

Hunter duly trained some dogs and other animals on Pavlov's lines. They were taught that when a light came on over one of three tunnels out of their cage, that tunnel would be open; they could escape down it, and were rewarded with food if they did. But once he had fixed that conditioned reflex, Hunter added to it a deeper idea: he gave the mechanical experiment a new di-

✪ J. BRONOWSKI is a senior fellow and trustee of the Salk Institute for Biological Studies in San Diego, California. "The Reach of Imagination," delivered as the Blashfield Address by Dr. Bronowski to the American Academy of Arts and Letters in New York last May, is printed with the permission of the Academy.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

mension, literally—the dimension of time. Now he no longer let the dog go to the lighted tunnel at once; instead, he put out the light, and then kept the dog waiting a little while before he let him go. In this way Hunter timed how long an animal can remember where he has last seen the signal light to his escape route.

The results were and are staggering. A dog or a rat forgets which one of three tunnels has been lit up within a matter of seconds—in Hunter's experiment, ten seconds at most. If you want such an animal to do much better than this, you must make the task much simpler: you must face him with only two tunnels to choose from. Even so, the best that Hunter could do was to have a dog remember for five minutes which one of two tunnels had been lit up.

I am not quoting these times as if they were exact and universal: they surely are not. Hunter's experiment, more than fifty years old now, had many faults of detail. For example, there were too few animals, they were oddly picked, and they did not all behave consistently. It may be unfair to test a dog for what he *saw,* when he commonly follows his nose rather than his eyes. It may be unfair to test any animal in the unnatural setting of a laboratory cage. And there are higher animals, such as chimpanzees and other primates, which certainly have longer memories than the animals that Hunter tried.

Yet when all these provisos have been made (and met, by more modern experiments) the facts are still startling and characteristic. An animal cannot recall a signal from the past for even a short fraction of the time that a man can—for even a short fraction of the time that a child can. Hunter made comparable tests with six-year-old children, and found, of course, that they were incomparably better than the best of his animals. There is a striking and basic difference between a man's ability to imagine something that he saw or experienced, and an animal's failure.

Animals make up for this by other and extraordinary gifts. The salmon and the carrier pigeon can find their way home as we cannot; they have, as it were, a practical memory that man cannot match. But their actions always depend on some form of habit: on instinct or on learning, which reproduce by rote a

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

train of known responses. They do not depend, as human memory does, on calling to mind the recollection of absent things.

Where is it that the animal falls short? We get a clue to the answer, I think, when Hunter tells us how the animals in his experiment tried to fix their recollection. They most often pointed themselves at the light before it went out, as some gun dogs point rigidly at the game they scent—and get the name *pointer* from the posture. The animal makes ready to act by building the signal into its action. There is a primitive imagery in its stance, it seems to me; it is as if the animal were trying to fix the light in its mind by fixing it in its body. And indeed, how else can a dog mark and (as it were) name one of three tunnels, when he has no such words as *left* and *right,* and no such numbers as *one, two, three?* The directed gesture of attention and readiness is perhaps the only symbolic device that the dog commands to hold on to the past, and thereby to guide himself into the future.

I used the verb *to imagine* a moment ago, and now I have some ground for giving it a meaning. *To imagine* means to make images and to move them about inside one's head in new arrangements. When you and I recall the past, we imagine it in this direct and homely sense. The tool that puts the human mind ahead of the animal is imagery. For us, memory does not demand the preoccupation that it demands in animals, and it lasts immensely longer, because we fix it in images or other substitute symbols. With the same symbolic vocabulary we spell out the future—not one but many futures, which we weigh one against another.

I am using the word *image* in a wide meaning, which does not restrict it to the mind's eye as a visual organ. An image in my usage is what Charles Peirce called a *sign,* without regard for its sensory quality. Peirce distinguished between different forms of signs, but there is no reason to make his distinction here, for the imagination works equally with them all, and that is why I call them all images.

Indeed, the most important images for human beings are simply words, which are abstract symbols. Animals do not have words, in our sense: there is no specific center for language in

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the brain of any animal, as there is in the human brain. In this respect at least we know that the human imagination depends on a configuration in the brain that has only evolved in the last one or two million years. In the same period, evolution has greatly enlarged the front lobes in the human brain, which govern the sense of the past and the future; and it is a fair guess that they are probably the seat of our other images. (Part of the evidence for this guess is that damage to the front lobes in primates reduces them to the state of Hunter's animals.) If the guess turns out to be right, we shall know why man has come to look like a highbrow or an egghead: because otherwise there would not be room in his head for his imagination.

The images play out for us events which are not present to our senses, and thereby guard the past and create the future—a future that does not yet exist, and may never come to exist in that form. By contrast, the lack of symbolic ideas, or their rudimentary poverty, cuts off an animal from the past and the future alike, and imprisons him in the present. Of all the distinctions between man and animal, the characteristic gift which makes us human is the power to work with symbolic images: the gift of imagination.

This is really a remarkable finding. When Philip Sidney in 1580 defended poets (and all unconventional thinkers) from the Puritan charge that they were liars, he said that a maker must imagine things that are not. Halfway between Sidney and us, William Blake said, "What is now proved was once only imagin'd." About the same time, in 1796, Samuel Taylor Coleridge for the first time distinguished between the passive fancy and the active imagination, "the living Power and prime Agent of all human Perception." Now we see that they were right, and precisely right: the human gift is the gift of imagination—and that is not just a literary phrase.

Nor is it just a literary gift; it is, I repeat, characteristically human. Almost everything that we do that is worth doing is done in the first place in the mind's eye. The richness of human life is that we have many lives; we live the events that do not happen (and some that cannot) as vividly as those that do; and if thereby we die a thousand deaths, that is the price we pay for living a

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

thousand lives. (A cat, of course, has only nine.) Literature is alive to us because we live its images, but so is any play of the mind—so is chess: the lines of play that we foresee and try in our heads and dismiss are as much a part of the game as the moves that we make. John Keats said that the unheard melodies are sweeter, and all chess players sadly recall that the combinations that they planned and which never came to be played were the best.

I make this point to remind you, insistently, that imagination is the manipulation of images in one's head; and that the rational manipulation belongs to that, as well as the literary and artistic manipulation. When a child begins to play games with things that stand for other things, with chairs or chessmen, he enters the gateway to reason and imagination together. For the human reason discovers new relations between things not by deduction, but by that unpredictable blend of speculation and insight that scientists call induction, which—like other forms of imagination—cannot be formalized. We see it at work when Walter Hunter inquires into a child's memory, as much as when Blake and Coleridge do. Only a restless and original mind would have asked Hunter's questions and could have conceived his experiments, in a science that was dominated by Pavlov's reflex arcs and was heading toward the behaviorism of John Watson.

Let me find a spectacular example for you from history. What is the most famous experiment that you had described to you as a child? I will hazard that it is the experiment that Galileo is said to have made in Sidney's age, in Pisa about 1590, by dropping two unequal balls from the Leaning Tower. There, we say, is a man in the modern mold, a man after our own hearts: he insisted on questioning the authority of Aristotle and St. Thomas Aquinas, and seeing with his own eyes whether (as they said) the heavy ball would reach the ground before the light one. Seeing is believing.

Yet seeing is also imagining. Galileo did challenge the authority of Aristotle, and he did look hard at his mechanics. But the eye that Galileo used was the mind's eye. He did not drop balls from the Leaning Tower of Pisa—and if he had, he would have got a very doubtful answer. Instead, Galileo made an imaginary experiment in his head, which I will describe as he did

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

years later in the book he wrote after the Holy Office silenced him: the *Discorsi . . . intorno à due nuove scienze,* which was smuggled out to be printed in the Netherlands in 1638.

Suppose, said Galileo, that you drop two unequal balls from the tower at the same time. And suppose that Aristotle is right—suppose that the heavy ball falls faster, so that it steadily gains on the light ball, and hits the ground first. Very well. Now imagine the same experiment done again, with only one difference: this time the two unequal balls are joined by a string between them. The heavy ball will again move ahead, but now the light ball holds it back and acts as a drag or brake. So the light ball will be speeded up and the heavy ball will be slowed down; they must reach the ground together because they are tied together, but they cannot reach the ground as quickly as the heavy ball alone. Yet the string between them has turned the two balls into a single mass which is heavier than either ball—and surely (according to Aristotle) this mass should therefore move faster than either ball? Galileo's imaginary experiment has uncovered a contradiction; he says trenchantly,

> You see how, from your assumption that a heavier body falls more rapidly than a lighter one, I infer that a (still) heavier body falls more slowly.

There is only one way out of the contradiction: the heavy ball and the light ball must fall at the same rate, so that they go on falling at the same rate when they are tied together.

This argument is not conclusive, for nature might be more subtle (when the two balls are joined) than Galileo has allowed. And yet it is something more important: it is suggestive, it is stimulating, it opens a new view—in a word, it is imaginative. It cannot be settled without an actual experiment, because nothing that we imagine can become knowledge until we have translated it into, and backed it by, real experience. The test of imagination is experience. But then, that is as true of literature and the arts as it is of science. In science, the imaginary experiment is tested by confronting it with physical experience; and in literature, the imaginative conception is tested by confronting it with human experience. The superficial speculation in science is dismissed because it is found to falsify nature; and the shallow

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

work of art is discarded because it is found to be untrue to our own nature. So when Ella Wheeler Wilcox died in 1919, more people were reading her verses than Shakespeare's; yet in a few years her work was dead. It had been buried by its poverty of emotion and its trivialness of thought: which is to say that it had been proved to be as false to the nature of man as, say, Jean Baptiste Lamarck and Trofim Lysenko were false to the nature of inheritance. The strength of the imagination, its enriching power and excitement, lies in its interplay with reality—physical and emotional.

I doubt if there is much to choose here between science and the arts: the imagination is not much more free, and not much less free, in one than in the other. All great scientists have used their imagination freely, and let it ride them to outrageous conclusions without crying "Halt!" Albert Einstein fiddled with imaginary experiments from boyhood, and was wonderfully ignorant of the facts that they were supposed to bear on. When he wrote the first of his beautiful papers on the random movement of atoms, he did not know that the Brownian motion which it predicted could be seen in any laboratory. He was sixteen when he invented the paradox that he resolved ten years later, in 1905, in the theory of relativity, and it bulked much larger in his mind than the experiment of Albert Michelson and Edward Morley which had upset every other physicist since 1881. All his life Einstein loved to make up teasing puzzles like Galileo's, about falling lifts and the detection of gravity; and they carry the nub of the problems of general relativity on which he was working.

Indeed, it could not be otherwise. The power that man has over nature and himself, and that a dog lacks, lies in his command of imaginary experience. He alone has the symbols which fix the past and play with the future, possible and impossible. In the Renaissance, the symbolism of memory was thought to be mystical, and devices that were invented as mnemonics (by Giordano Bruno, for example, and by Robert Fludd) were interpreted as magic signs. The symbol is the tool which gives man his power, and it is the same tool whether the symbols are images or words, mathematical signs or mesons. And the symbols have a reach and a roundness that goes beyond their literal and practical

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

meaning. They are the rich concepts under which the mind gathers many particulars into one name, and many instances into one general induction. When a man says *left* and *right,* he is outdistancing the dog not only in looking for a light; he is setting in train all the shifts of meaning, the overtones and the ambiguities, between *gauche* and *adroit* and *dexterous,* between *sinister* and the sense of right. When a man counts *one, two, three,* he is not only doing mathematics; he is on the path to the mysticism of numbers in Pythagoras and Vitruvius and Kepler, to the Trinity and the signs of the Zodiac.

I have described imagination as the ability to make images and to move them about inside one's head in new arrangements. This is the faculty that is specifically human, and it is the common root from which science and literature both spring and grow and flourish together. For they do flourish (and languish) together; the great ages of science are the great ages of all the arts, because in them powerful minds have taken fire from one another, breathless and higgledy-piggledy, without asking too nicely whether they ought to tie their imagination to falling balls or a haunted island. Galileo and Shakespeare, who were born in the same year, grew into greatness in the same age; when Galileo was looking through his telescope at the moon, Shakespeare was writing *The Tempest;* and all Europe was in ferment, from Johannes Kepler to Peter Paul Rubens, and from the first table of logarithms by John Napier to the Authorised Version of the Bible.

Let me end with a last and spirited example of the common inspiration of literature and science, because it is as much alive today as it was three hundred years ago. What I have in mind is man's ageless fantasy, to fly to the moon. I do not display this to you as a high scientific enterprise; on the contrary, I think we have more important discoveries to make here on earth than wait for us, beckoning, at the horned surface of the moon. Yet I cannot belittle the fascination which that ice-blue journey has had for the imagination of men, long before it drew us to our television screens to watch the tumbling of astronauts. Plutarch and Lucian, Ariosto and Ben Jonson wrote about it, before the days of Jules Verne and H. G. Wells and science fiction. The

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

seventeenth century was heady with new dreams and fables about voyages to the moon. Kepler wrote one full of deep scientific ideas, which (alas) simply got his mother accused of witchcraft. In England, Francis Godwin wrote a wild and splendid work, *The Man in the Moone,* and the astronomer John Wilkins wrote a wild and learned one, *The Discovery of a New World.* They did not draw a line between science and fancy; for example, they all tried to guess just where in the journey the earth's gravity would stop. Only Kepler understood that gravity has no boundary, and put a law to it—which happened to be the wrong law.

All this was a few years before Isaac Newton was born, and it was all in his head that day in 1666 when he sat in his mother's garden, a young man of twenty-three, and thought about the reach of gravity. This was how he came to conceive his brilliant image, that the moon is like a ball which has been thrown so hard that it falls exactly as fast as the horizon, all the way round the earth. The image will do for any satellite, and Newton modestly calculated how long therefore an astronaut would take to fall round the earth once. He made it ninety minutes, and we have all seen now that he was right; but Newton had no way to check that. Instead he went on to calculate how long in that case the distant moon would take to round the earth, if indeed it behaves like a thrown ball that falls in the earth's gravity, and if gravity obeyed a law of inverse squares. He found that the answer would be twenty-eight days.

In that telling figure, the imagination that day chimed with nature, and made a harmony. We shall hear an echo of that harmony on the day when we land on the moon, because it will be not a technical but an imaginative triumph, that reaches back to the beginning of modern science and literature both. All great acts of imagination are like this, in the arts and in science, and convince us because they fill out reality with a deeper sense of rightness. We start with the simplest vocabulary of images, with *left* and *right* and *one, two, three,* and before we know how it happened the words and the numbers have conspired to make a match with nature: we catch in them the pattern of mind and matter as one.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Student Politics in a Democratic Society

NATHAN GLAZER

TEN YEARS AGO our topic would have been a very bland one indeed. At that time the wave of serious G. I. student veterans had already passed through the schools; students were seen as passive, uninvolved, uninterested in society, and concerned only for their own careers and their own security. The most influential descriptions of the students of the mid-fifties were, I believe, those of David Riesman, who described their premature caution in questioning the recruiting agents of corporations about pension and retirement plans. If anyone had raised then the question of the role of students in a democratic society, it could only have been to answer that their role should be larger; that students should concern themselves more with public affairs, with the large problems of society, should involve themselves in social and political action.

But after the revolutionary role played by Southern Negro students and Northern white students in the South, after the explosion at Berkeley in which students overthrew the administration of one of the country's great universities, who could simply repeat these platitudes, and not feel forced to examine the question closely, considering not only the impact of student political involvement on society, but on one of the major institutions of society itself, the college and university?

Let me try to describe in order three positions on the role of the student in a democratic society, and to analyze their content and their consequences.

The first position is the simplest and the most cautious. It is

✪ NATHAN GLAZER is professor of sociology at the University of California, Berkeley. He is the author of *American Judaism* and *The Social Basis of American Communism,* and coauthor of *The Lonely Crowd* (with David Riesman and Reuel Denney) and *Beyond the Melting Pot* (with Daniel P. Moynihan).

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

that the student should learn about all the problems of the society and in effect prepare himself to act in the society. This on the face of it would seem to be an inevitable and necessary part of the education of the student, and it would seem reasonable that all those who accept the underlying premises of higher education, and who assume it has more than purely vocational and training functions, would accept this point of view. Unfortunately, as we know, this has not always been the case. In America, our universities have a very distinctive form: they are run by trustees, public and private, not by faculty, and not by students. And we have a long history of interference by trustees in the running of the university—private trustees and public trustees. Certain ideas—arguments in favor of socialism or communism, arguments in favor of full racial equality, criticisms of the American economic system and its capacity to create the best society, criticisms of America's foreign policy and participation in war—are capable of arousing violent and emotional reactions. These reactions are one of the permanent dangers of a democratic system. They lead the powerful to interfere in the teaching function of the university; and they lead the people to interfere, too, through their legislators. If the people were in a position to act directly on their feelings all of the time, democracy, we know from various studies, would be in very bad shape.

Substantial majorities of the American people are against having atheists or even Socialists teach in American universities. Concerning Communists, there is an even more overwhelming rejection. Sidney Hook and others have made a powerful case on intellectual grounds against allowing Communists to teach, because they are under discipline and cannot teach the truth as they see it. I believe this argument is somewhat exaggerated, certainly when it comes to Communist teachers of mathematics and science, and even when it comes to Communist teachers of humanities and the social sciences, where Communist doctrines have a more immediate impact. Someone who is formally under discipline is not under discipline at all times and for all purposes. If this were the case, Catholics might also be considered unqualified to be university teachers. And additionally, one might argue against this position that Communists change; even

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in the Communist world there is today an argument going on over the limits of freedom.

So even the position that the university is a place in which students are freely prepared to play an active role as citizens in the world is itself always, in most places, and in some measure, controversial. This controversy breaks out when the university administration—either in its own right or under the pressure of trustees and of public opinion—limits students' access to certain ideas. Must everything be taught in the university? Of course not, and there is no easy way to ensure that it should. But when a group of teachers feels that they should add someone to their number who is qualified to teach, and who expounds either in the course of his teaching or outside the classroom unpopular ideas, I think no one should interfere to prevent such an appointment. If a group of students or professors feels they want to listen to someone speak on the campus, no one should prevent them from having that opportunity. This is the position that the university teachers of America have developed, and despite the fact that this is the mildest form in which students participate in a democratic society, we know that it is continually threatened.

There still remain serious problems when we consider this relatively simple form of participation. Does the university have the right to require that faculty members guide student groups and approve their action in inviting off-campus speakers? Does the university have the right to require that one view presented on campus be balanced by another? Does the university have the right to require that questions be allowed at meetings? Does the university have the right to require that faculty members chair meetings? Does the university have the right to decide where in the university a meeting shall be held, thus limiting effectively the size of the audience? Does it have the right to require student groups to pay for police protection, if the off-campus speaker is so controversial that disorder or violence may be feared? Must the university provide loudspeakers for the speaker? May the university deny the most prominent locations on the campus to the speaker?

These are all real questions at Berkeley, questions that have been debated endlessly, and that have mostly been answered, "no." Even when we raise an apparently unobjectionable prin-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ciple—the right to be informed and educated about the chief issues and positions in conflict in society, the right to be prepared to be a citizen—we cannot answer all questions on the basis of the application of a simple principle and simple rule alone. Any principle, when it becomes absolute, brings other principles into question.

On most campuses the answer to the questions I have raised has been "yes." That is, it is agreed that the university does have the right to restrict in various ways, and by the setting of various rules, the freedom to hear a variety of opinions expressed on campus. If these rules exist in order to restrict the freedom to be informed, to learn, then there is no question that they violate the chief function of a university. But there is another ground on which such rules are imposed and defended—the ground that the university has a duty to ensure the broad education of the students. This duty requires that faculty supervise in some manner the activities of student organizations, that the university ensure that there is free discussion and the presentation of alternative views, and even that the university, through the assignment of facilities for speakers, consider the overall educational impact of the pattern of speakers and the degree of their prominence. Thus, one could argue, on educational grounds, that the university should be concerned if the only points of view on our military involvement in Vietnam presented on campus are critical of American policy. But if there is such a concern, what is the proper form of procedure? Does the university encourage student groups who support American policy to form and present programs? Does it sponsor its own programs? Does it restrict the activities of the critics? These are all real questions, and real possibilities—once again, they become more evident on politically active campuses than on others.

On these questions, just as on the questions of free speech generally, there are many disputed marginal areas, and in our society we have developed forms for the settlement of these marginal cases—principally courts of law. Once one raises these issues seriously and passionately on the campus, however, the question that properly arises is: what forms exist to settle such matters? The decisions of the state legislature? The board of trustees?

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The president? The faculty? Or the students themselves? It is because on a politically active campus such as Berkeley the question of the limit of free speech and political activity is continually raised, and we have frequent conflicts between the vital principle of free speech and such other principles as public order and the primacy of educational objectives, that the question of the rules, how they are set and who sets them, has become so important.

Thus, even such a mild and apparently cautious formulation of the student's role in a democratic society as the one I have first posed—that the student should be prepared to act better as a citizen—raises serious questions for a university. How much more serious then are the questions raised by the next position, which is rather stronger. The second position is that the student should actively participate in the political and social conflicts of the society. The argument here is that first, society needs him—the student is better educated, less bound by responsibility of occupation and family, more generous and more flexible in his political and social attitudes, than other citizens. And the argument continues, the student needs action in society to make his education really complete. Certainly it is easy for us to find examples that support both arguments. The part of my own college education that was most vital, most important to me, was participation in a radical student political organization. I learned not only how to speak, how to write, how to edit a newspaper, how to organize a conference—and these are all valuable skills; I also learned an ideology. Certainly the way I learned it was not the way I would want to teach anyone—for I learned in a political organization, not a university, and I was indoctrinated rather than taught. And yet on the basis of further experience in the world, the indoctrination wore off. It became possible for me to learn then how indoctrination itself works, why at one stage in one's life one is ready to believe what, in the course of further experience, one rejects as nonsense.

This is a fairly extreme form of participation. But the participation of students in the work of political parties, in the work of social and political organizations, can add a dimension to their education that is quite beyond the power of the classroom and the teacher. A university should not limit such participation. In-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

deed, I believe many universities should find ways to encourage such participation, despite all the difficulties such encouragement might bring. Thus, I think universities might well grant time off and perhaps even credit for participation in political campaigns, although I imagine this would be easier for small private colleges than for large state-supported institutions. It would not do to have it turn out that more students were supporting the campaigns of one party than of another!

I have said too that society needs this participation. And it is scarcely necessary to spell this out in the South, where to my mind the greatest and healthiest change that has occurred since the Civil War has been brought about by the activism, the heroism, of students, South and North. The South was and is still in large measure afflicted by the terrible contradictions between the principles of democracy and equality and the reality of the treatment of the Negro, both officially and unofficially. The rest of the country remained in large measure ignorant or unmoved by these injustices. It was students, unencumbered by adult responsibilities and rationalizations, committed to a greater justice and equality, who played a significant role in bringing long-maintained injustices to the attention of the nation, and in overturning them.

To my mind two problems are raised by the position that the student should participate, for his good and for the good of society, in the social and political conflicts of his time. The first problem is presented by the fact that the participation of the students may be so energetic and effective that powerful forces in the society will move against the university. I do not in the slightest suggest that the antagonism of powerful forces who are the targets of student actions should be a sufficient reason for the university to restrict this action. Yet in the concrete situations in which colleges and universities are placed, this is a serious problem indeed. At certain times in recent years the presidents and boards of trustees of Negro colleges in the South have moved against students who have engaged in political action off the campus. The dilemma of these administrators must be understood. They feared that if they allowed the students to continue to participate in demonstrations they would draw upon their in-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

stitutions the enmity of governors and state legislatures, see their budgets cut, and perhaps worse. Thus they faced the tragic choice between maintaining the growth of their institutions and curbing their students, or allowing their students to participate in off-campus political activity and facing loss of necessary support.

This, in a far less serious form, was also one of the problems faced by the administration of the University of California. Many hundreds of California students had been active in sit-ins, clearly illegal, undertaken in San Francisco during the 1963-64 academic year. The targets of these demonstrations were the hiring practices of San Francisco businessmen. From the point of view of the businessmen, as taxpayers and citizens of California, the business of the students was to study in the university that the state's taxpayers had so lavishly equipped. Many citizens and government and law enforcement officials were angered by the sit-ins. Many people demanded that the university restrict the off-campus political activities of its students. President Kerr answered that what the students did off campus was their business, and the university could not be responsible for them. It would not discipline them; neither would it protect them or intercede for them if they got into trouble for breaking the law.

This seemed at the time a clear and strong position. But even this position, I believe, cannot be maintained unequivocally. In the course of the following year, the year of the student uprising on the Berkeley campus to protest restrictions on their freedom to engage in political activities on campus, a second problem became evident in the position that urges students to participate in community politics.

All through that tense year, the student political leaders insisted that they could not be held responsible for any off-campus political action, legal or illegal, because that would affect their constitutional rights. But after campus sit-ins and arrests, after the faculty had voted overwhelmingly in support of the student position, after endless meetings and consultations, the rules at the university still assert that a student *may* be held responsible for off-campus actions. Was it only because of the stubbornness of the regents of the university that this principle is still maintained in the rules—although no action has been taken

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

under it against students? I do not believe so, although certainly their stubbornness is important. It is rather that as the range of political action has widened to include not only illegal actions to test the constitutionality of laws, but illegal actions to force public officials and private citizens to accept the views of certain groups, and illegal actions to extend the realm of permissible moral behavior—as this expansion of the traditional notion of permissible political behavior has widened, it has become increasingly clear that there is a limit at which the university may and should discipline students for off-campus behavior. This has long been clear in the case of standard college fun and games, brutal hazings, destructive pranks, and so on. These are now less common than they were. But politics may take over where the fraternities and football rallies left off. The question then arises, should the term "political" cover and exempt every action that students undertake under that name?

I am convinced that the university—in any case, the American university—cannot accept the principle that it is indifferent to the actions of its students off the campus, that it is indifferent to the character of its students, and that any action they perform will be left to the civil arm to handle. For the university is also based on certain principles—respect for ideas, freedom of speech and inquiry, the elimination of prejudice and intolerance; and it is possible for student actions in the community to undermine and attack these principles. At that point, the university cannot be indifferent to the actions of its students.

The problem here is that the university will often be urged by the pressure of its contributors and supporters, by the citizens of the state, by legislators and governors, to act against students who engage in political and social actions in the community. Its own interests may often lead it to restrict student rights, claiming it is doing so to maintain the authority of the administration, the order of the campus and the very principles that are necessary for higher education. There are serious dangers involved in the principle that, at the margin, student actions in the community may be a basis for university action against them. For students should be free to experiment, to make mistakes, to expand the area of political action. But the danger that students will be re-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

stricted to quiet public opinion should not lead us to deny the reality that students at some times and places have in the past and may again in the future engage in actions that they will defend in the light of some political position or perspective, but that will require university action against them. If one group of students were to attack or break up the meetings of another group because of their race, religion or opinions; or if one group of students were to outrage the religious sensibilities of another group—these might well be matters for the courts, but they would also be matters for the conscience of the university. I remain convinced of this principle because it is inconceivable to me that our major private institutions, which are freer than state institutions of either student or public pressures, would ever accept the principle that the off-campus actions of their students were not subject to their concern.

The third position on the student's role in a democratic society raises the most serious considerations. Let me recall that the first position is that the student should be *prepared* to participate as a citizen in the political and social conflicts of society; the second, that he should be *encouraged* to participate even as a student in the political and social conflicts of society; the third position is that the university campus is a *key source of activists* for the various political and social positions in conflict in society. Thus, according to this position, the campus should be open to active recruitment and preparation of students for enlistment and leadership in the significant political and social camps of society.

Characteristically, the American student has not been considered fully adult, or fully mature. This has been a consequence of such factors as the role in American higher education of the need to train ministers, and, of course, seminarians have always been subjected to a severe discipline; of the influence on American higher education of the English rather than the continental model, so that students live in colleges under teachers who also act in lieu of parents; of the influence in American higher education of the characteristic location of university campuses in small towns or in the country, which has meant that the college or university has had to supply housing and has therefore had some concern with the life of the student. In view of this back-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ground, which brings American higher education closer to the cloister or the preparatory school than to the European university, it would indeed be strange to view the university as one of the chief sources of political activists for immediate participation in the struggles that face society.

Yet as we know, in underdeveloped countries today, the universities do play this role. When the students of Vietnam or South Korea or Indonesia decide to move against their governments, those governments tremble and are indeed in jeopardy. In the more advanced states with very large urban universities—such as Japan and France—the students are also an important political force, although not so important as in the underdeveloped world. The reason is that in the advanced states, even though there are many more students, there are politically active classes that have much greater importance in the political life of society than do the students. There are organized industrialists and businessmen, an organized trade union movement, professional societies of all sorts that may take a role in politics. Under these circumstances, while the students of Japan and France may shake a government, they alone cannot overthrow one. In the underdeveloped states, on the other hand, there is a mass peasantry, a small middle class devoted to its own security, leaving the students and the army to form the chief participants in the active political life of society.

Under these circumstances, every important party must pay attention to its student base. If the Communists had succeeded in capturing the leadership of Indonesian students, there would have been no way of preventing that country from going Communist: but apparently non-Communist nationalist and Moslem elements were also strong among the students. Thus in certain nations the political outlook of students—the relative strength of certain political groups among them—is critical for the political fate of the nation.

In this country, until recently, students have been much less important politically than even in Europe. They did not develop the political activism of the students of underdeveloped countries, certainly, or of Continental Europe. And since they were not the sharply defined future elite of the country as in England

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

—for here our elite has been more open and mass higher education has been a reality for generations—there was no great interest in how their political views were developing. The only political groups that have ever shown great interest in the students have been radical groups—Communists, Socialists and more recently the groups of the radical right, ideological conservatives. All these groups play a relatively minor role in American politics; they are incapable of developing any substantial support among the major social strata of the country, whether businessmen, professionals, workers, farmers, white collar workers, or what you will. Consequently they have been attracted to the campus, where in addition they may find among students the rational and ideological outlook that may make their consistent if extreme positions attractive. Thus student politics—unlike national politics—has often consisted of the conflict between radical groups.

What has all this to do with the present situation? It is my feeling that in recent years we have seen the beginnings, in a number of very different events, of the potential politicalization of the American campus. Let me point to three events.

The first is the major role that the Negro students of the South played in the last seven years in breaking the pattern of official and unofficial discrimination against the Negro. Here we had a situation similar to that which we find in the underdeveloped world. The Negro student was in a position to play a key role. The larger part of the Negro people in the South were uneducated and apathetic or beaten, and accepted their inferior role. The Negro middle class also accepted for the most part an inferior status. Just as in the underdeveloped world, the Negro students formed a class available for the political work of society, their society. Perhaps only one element in the political constellation of underdeveloped societies was missing among Negroes in the South—there was no army. So the Negro students held the field unopposed and were able to become the political leaders of their people.

There were other important political parallels between the position of the Negro in the South and the position of the people in an underdeveloped country: the formal political structure

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

offered few effective means for improving it, because so many were excluded from the vote. I would say that when these three circumstances prevail: when the students are the only or the chief class available for political activity; when the problems of the nation are desperate; and when there is no effective democratic procedure for reform—under these circumstances, I believe, the students become one of the dominant political classes in society, and become the target for recruitment by the chief political forces in society.

Was the involvement of Negro students in the fight for equality only an exceptional case? For our society as a whole certainly does not show the features of an underdeveloped society; the students are not the only available class to do the political work of society; our problems are not desperate; our democracy functions, and change, even extensive and radical change, has been and can be brought about through the democratic process.

We should realize, however, that there is a growing political viewpoint in this country, the viewpoint of the New Left, which actually does see America in these terms: the New Left believes the people are corrupted by the mass media dominated by business interests, and that therefore their participation in our democracy is meaningless and ineffective; they believe the American people are corrupted by the opportunities for a high standard of living, and therefore are indifferent to the poverty and misery of most of the world and their fellow citizens as well; they believe democracy is ineffective because even those social groups that in the past have fought for the extension of equality—intellectuals and the labor movement—have been corrupted and bought by what they call the power structure, and consequently only among the students does one have the political forces potentially available for solving the problems of society, which they also see as desperate.

It is this viewpoint that has been, in a number of variants, dominant among politically active students at Berkeley and that has been to my mind at the base of the turmoil on that campus. For if the campus is a chief source of recruits, and indeed may be the salvation of the society, then every means of access to students must be exploited, and the question of the rules that gov-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ern that access becomes crucial. For the rules may limit the number of meetings a group may hold in a week, or deprive them of loudspeakers, or of the best locations on the campus, or may deprive them of using nonstudents to aid in the political work of propaganda and recruitment.

Is Berkeley the sport, the exception, of the sixties, just as City College was the sport of the thirties? Or does it reflect some deeper underlying trends on the American campus, which are transforming the campus into one of the chief sources of political activists, one of the chief centers of political debate and decision? Certainly many observers have seen in Berkeley a portent, and they have been proved right in the spread of student demands to other campuses that have been influenced by Berkeley. But let us distinguish two rather different things that happened at Berkeley: one was a free speech movement, which involved the active participation of thousands of students, and which struck at the whole system of university rules that treated students in some ways as children and as less than citizens. These rules are to be found in universities across the country. The students also struck at the conception that students should be excluded from formulating the rules under which they live. Thus we have seen a growing demand for greater student freedom on campus—freedom not only to participate in politics but to govern their own social activities; we have also seen a growing demand for a greater student role in university government. I believe both these demands are justified. The American university still bears in too many cases the marks of its origins in the seminary, in the high school, and in the cornfields; and as adult students, who in many ways become adult earlier than their teachers and the administrators did, come into the universities, the rules must become less restrictive, and the student role in university government must become greater.

This was one aspect of the free speech movement at Berkeley, but it was closely linked to something else. A relatively small group of students, supported by large numbers of former students and prospective students, had flocked to the university primarily to make it a chief center of political creativity and activism in society. They fought against the rules not only for

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the same reasons that other students opposed them, but because the rules limited their access to students whom they wished to recruit for political activity. In addition, this struggle gave the radical leaders an opportunity to teach their view of American society to other students by attacking the rules as reflecting the restrictions, the bureaucratization and hypocrisy of that society.

This part of the Berkeley story has not been understood or told too clearly, and this part of the struggle is still going on. Thus, student and nonstudent political leaders sometimes see students as the chief force that might change the course of American policy in Vietnam. This is an ambitious perspective indeed; it is also in large measure an arrogant perspective, for it ignores the reality of a politically sophisticated society, in which many strata, many people, many groups, will have their say on Vietnam and will play a role in determining American policy there. This is also a perspective that inevitably has brought the student leaders in conflict with the university and its faculty, as they press for the widest possible opportunities to spread and indeed impose their views on the campus. Most of the faculty, despite its interest in and concern for political problems, does not favor or see as possible any such ambitious role for the university in American political life. Indeed, they fear such a role, for then the university might well lose what limited degree of distance it now has from the problems of the society.

There is unquestionably a tension—there should be a tension—between the university and society. This tension exists in the fact that the university should not take as seriously and immediately as those actively engaged in society the problems of society. It can look at these problems in historical perspective; it can try to strip these problems of the emotions that invest them; it can try new and strange and even playful alternatives, in thought and in experiment. Thus, I would argue, there is still some virtue in the independence of the university in some measure from the immediate problems of society, although these virtues are not often exploited.

This independence is threatened from a number of quarters. One threat is from the insistent demand that the university be helpful—the demand from business and government that it of-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

fer practical aid, which continually diverts the research time and teaching of universities into areas of immediate payoff. Another threat is from the vocational conception of the university. The university must prepare students for jobs—and the student demand for an immediate vocational payoff from higher education, even though there are more forms of support outside of work than there used to be, has become more and more insistent.

But the independence of the university will also be threatened by turning it into a chief center of political activity. The universities have recently played an important role in this country in making the war in Vietnam a subject of national debate—I can think of no other major issue in this country's history in which the universities have played such an important role. They have developed a means of bringing this subject to national attention that is ideally suited to the nature of the university—the teach-in, in which the problems are analyzed and a broad array of fact and analysis is brought to bear upon them. But on many campuses, on the politically most active campuses, the teach-in becomes a political weapon; when it does, speakers who support our policy in Vietnam are booed and shouted down; those who oppose our policy bring into play the most powerful emotional appeals, not in order to make the issues clearer, but to arouse the strongest possible response—in other words, they become propagandists and recruiters. At this point, the university brings nothing of its own to the discussion and understanding of our problems. Indeed, the political leaders of the New Left criticize the faculty for being insufficiently emotional in their discussion of key issues. They criticize the faculty too for its effort to maintain objectivity and its refusal to join them in a warm bath of emotion and anti-intellectual communal togetherness. This is also a danger to the university.

Thus, this third position on the student's role in a democracy raises troubling questions. I do not think the university in a democratic society ideally should be a chief target of political forces, seeking to find recruits and activists, to seize the political leadership of students, and to use student organizations and the university name as a weapon in political combat. I can envisage situations when such an all-out use of all available resources in

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

society for a political struggle to prevent some great evil is necessary, and I appreciate the views of those who believe the American involvement in Vietnam presents such a threat, and thus does require us to ignore the special character of institutions in bringing all of them into the battle. I do believe the situation of the Negro in the South in the early sixties did justify the use of every resource the Negro possessed—the church, the college, the tactics of civil disobedience—to overcome the grave injustices in his position.

The same orientation, it is now argued, must affect all the universities of the country in overcoming a grave threat to American democracy. Just as enlistment in a war means that much must stop in a man's life, just as involvement in a war for a nation means it must stop building schools and hospitals, so, at least on my campus, I am told by some of our students and faculty colleagues, we must invest all the resources of the university—its students, its faculty, its classrooms, its capacity to command public attention—in the struggle against American policy in Vietnam. As I listen to these voices, I think of the problems of the past and of the problems of the future, and I see that there will always be a problem that to some will justify this mobilization of the resources of the university for some political end. There are situations when the university must indeed be mobilized in the defense of human ends, must become a seat of struggle, with all that means for the independence of the university, for which so many hard struggles have been fought, and which even today is achieved only in measure in some universities. I do not believe we face such a situation in this country today. I think our democracy does function, even if with many difficulties; many of our people are alert to our problems; and there are many hands willing to take up the necessary political work of society. Under these circumstances, I believe that the first two positions I have described form a sound basis for answering the question, what is the student's political role in a democracy? He should be prepared for a political role, he should learn from involvement in political activity—but he should not try to transform his university into a bastion and base of political activity.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

To a Scholar in the Stacks

HOWARD NEMEROV

When you began your story all its words
Had long been written down, its elements
Already so cohered in such exact
Equations that there should have seemed to be
No place to go, no entrance to the maze.
A heart less bold would have refused to start,
A mind less ignorant would have stayed home.

For Pasiphaë already had conceived
And borne her bully boy, and Daedalus
Responding had designed the darkness in
Its mystical divisions; Theseus,
Before you came, descended and returned,
By means of the thread, many and many a time.
What was there that had not been always done?

And still, when you began, only because
You did begin, the way opened before you.
The pictured walls made room, received your life;
Pasiphaë frowned, the Sea King greeted you,
And sighing Ariadne gave the thread
As always; in that celebrated scene
You were alone in being alone and new.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

And now? You have gone down, you have gone in,
You have become incredibly rich and wise
From wandering underground. And yet you weary
And disbelieve, daring the Minotaur
Who answers in the echoes of your voice,
Holding the thread that has no other end,
Speaking her name whom you abandoned long ago.

Then out of this what revelation comes?
Sometimes in darkness and in deep despair
You will remember, Theseus, that you were
The Minotaur, the Labyrinth and the thread
Yourself; even you were that ingener
That fled the maze and flew—so long ago—
Over the sunlit sea to Sicily.

✪ *Journal of the Fictive Life* is HOWARD NEMEROV's most recent book. Among Mr. Nemerov's other books are *Poetry and Fiction, Next Room of the Dream, Mirrors and Windows: Poems* and *New and Selected Poems.* He teaches at Brandeis University.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The Seventh Fold

J. Donald Adams

Deep in the intricate country of the mind
I took a twisting path that led me,
Stumbling, to a wind-wracked hill.
Those thickets I had passed through,
Tangled, briery, tough to break,
And swampy, sometimes, underfoot—
Were well behind now, lost to sight,
And at the moment, lost to mind.
The hill I'd reached was high enough
To look on distances that dropped away,
Fold upon fold,
Melting, far to westward, into a dim horizon.
They beckoned,
And my feet, so heavy as I had begun
To climb the hill,
Were now uplifted to a lighter pace.
What land is this, I asked in taking breath?
What lies beyond that seventh fold?
Take heart, I told myself; go farther on.

✪ J. DONALD ADAMS edited the *New York Times Book Review* from 1925 until 1943, and then, until 1964, contributed its weekly *Speaking of Books* column. He is the author, among other books, of *The Magic and Mystery of Words* and *Speaking of Books—and Life.*

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Is the Church Obsolete?

The Crisis of Religion in a Secular Age

WILLIAM ROBERT MILLER

HERESY IS A FIGHTING WORD. To the orthodox it means error and connotes a threat to true doctrine. To the rebel, just because it is the bane of orthodoxy, it signifies a proclamation of truth. If orthodoxy stands for corruption, oppression, obscurity and the like, the heretic must be a bringer of enlightenment, so the reasoning goes.

We have only recently emerged from an era in which these concepts were not merely tags for opponents in a debate. For centuries men have been tortured and massacred for heresy, and even in very recent times the charge has carried penalties of social ostracism, loss of job and civil disabilities—all within the context of an ostensibly secular community. Within the churches, and ignoring fanatical sects whose faith is synonymous with intolerance, at the present time heresy is still considered a ground for dismissing clergymen and theologians from their positions.

To those who reject religion or the church, this fact is only one more sign of its ingrained malevolence. To the loyal churchman, however, it is a necessary expedient, and the only applicable question has to do with the issues on which the charge hinges. Shall a pastor be permitted to follow his own conscience if it bids him to proclaim what his church considers false? After all, certain assumptions and assurances were made when he entered his profession, and there must be some sort of control over the contract that this implies. There must be circumstances in which even a Quaker meeting might disown and exclude an unruly Friend who made a habit of singing "Onward, Christian Sol-

✪ WILLIAM ROBERT MILLER, a Protestant lay theologian, is author of *Nonviolence*. His anthology, *The New Christianity*, will be published in May 1967 by Delacorte Press. He is now writing a book on the current upheaval in theology, and another titled *Ethics in Action*.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

diers" during the hour of silent worship—or who scoffed too vigorously at the Quaker doctrine of the Inner Light.

Clearly, then, heresy and orthodoxy are relative terms, to be understood in relation not merely to some free-floating abstraction of truth but to the doctrines and dispositions of an institution. Institutions by their nature are resistant to change, and this is both a vice and a virtue. For without an element of inertia there would be no stability. Conservatism and a certain outdatedness are the price paid for continuity, reliability and order. The problem is not how to dispense with order and thereby live from moment to moment by an exact truth somehow revealed through personal oracles, but how to keep order from becoming stifling —how to make room for change within the institution itself.

Every institution has this problem, even medical associations and scientific academies, not to mention political parties. Each has a certain stake in a body of accepted ideas or practices, and its officials are likely to greet with derision any man or idea that departs from it in a significant way. Lister, Freud, Reich, Korzybski, Velikovsky are cases in point—some of them not settled even now. One might rattle off a similar list in the field of religion: Strauss, Feuerbach, Emerson, Renan, Wyneken, Tolstoi, Schweitzer—but the analogy is faulty, and for good reason, because the church is not simply a center of inquiry into a given area of objectively verifiable knowledge. Startling though they may be, the theories of Reich and Velikovsky will eventually either be incorporated into the "house of intellect" or left outside, once their data receive an impartial hearing. Freudians and Skinnerites may despise one another and belong to different professional associations; but there is room for both in the larger community of thought.

The moment we say "church" instead of merely "religion" or "community of religious thought," we must admit all its ramifications. Quite aside from its definition as the Body of Christ or a fellowship of believers, we have to do with a nationwide and even international administrative structure, training centers for ministers and missionaries, local congregations and church buildings, publications and "religious articles," a whole repertory of music and worship practices, curricula and teachers for children

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

of every age, and all the various paraphernalia that bind the whole together and enable it to function. If some brilliant young archeologist tomorrow discovered convincing proof that Jesus was not crucified but beheaded, and if this discovery was accepted by the consensus of archeologists, it would probably still take a very long time before crosses were removed from local churches or the word "crucified" removed from the creeds. It would be at least several generations before the cross disappeared from common piety. If it ever did. For the greater likelihood is that the custodians of doctrine would find a way to retain the cross as a symbol. A great deal has already been written about the cross in a metaphorical sense—how the upright signifies the relation to God and the crossbar the relation to mankind—which is entirely fortuitous to those who constructed this instrument of execution.

The example is suppositious, but it is not too wide of the mark. Such discoveries as the Dead Sea Scrolls, the Gospel of Thomas, *et cetera,* have not altered the canons of Scripture and are not likely to, although they may alter scholarly interpretation and even new translations of the Bible. For the church apparently is heavily committed to the canon as fixed by theologians of the fourth and fifth centuries and, given its institutional inertia, any suggestion that the question be reopened could only be viewed with dismay.

There is a strong and honest impulse within the church today to be modern and relevant. For some this may mean nothing more than uttering ancient ideas in colloquial jargon. But for others it goes much deeper. The tension between this impulse and the inertia of many centuries is at the heart of the present-day crisis of the church's integrity. For the church has, throughout its existence, predicated its claim to spiritual leadership on conceptions of orthodoxy that no longer correspond to the realities that men live by. It has, for example, become irrelevant to assert that Mary was a virgin. The average intelligent man is skeptical of such an assertion. But more important, he is not interested in it. It doesn't count. Even if it could be proved with affidavits and photographs, it would be nothing more than a curiosity, for as a religious symbol it drew its power from a con-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

text altogether different from his own. A notion so alien and implausible can only be regarded as a superstition, and any refusal to recognize it as a superstition only confirms the notion that the church is more interested in its ties to the distant past than to the needs of the present or of the eternal.

The theologian today is in an unenviable position. He speaks from a context loaded with the weight of church history—not only of dogma but of everything that has ever been done in the name of orthodoxy. His status and right to be heard "as a Christian" depend in greater or lesser degree on a tacit acceptance of the Bible, the creeds, the Fathers of the early church, the Reformers and so forth, except to the extent that he states his reservations. The Lutheran theologian is not in a position to entertain the hypothesis that Luther was a fraud. Even in the freest of the Free Churches, which do not require allegiance to the Nicene Creed, there is nevertheless a theological atmosphere that makes it safer to affirm the contents of the creed than to dispute them. It is vaguely heretical even to point out that the formulations of faith embodied in this and other creeds adopted by the church councils were both irrelevant and divisive, and that they testify to a fundamental mistake in understanding the nature of religious truth. We forget, too, the existential betrayal of Jesus' teachings that solemnized these decisions. It is not a matter only of Tetzel and the abuses of the sixteenth century—the fact is that such doctrines as the Trinity, the Resurrection, the Incarnation, were adopted in a vicious spirit. Far from loving one another or forgiving one another, bishops and presbyters defamed each other, promoting enmity, resorting to strong-arm methods, rioting and torture for the sake of these arid abstractions.

I am not here arguing against these doctrines. I am, however, pointing out that they did not grow naturally from the life and message of Jesus, and persuade his followers of their truth, nor did they become simply opinions held by a majority of the wise. Whether true or untrue, they became official and were imposed by force. Their status is thus suspect, for one must ask what sort of people would behave in this way and still call themselves followers of Jesus. Either they are right to impose the doctrine of the Trinity by force, and Jesus is wrong to teach love and kind-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ness; or, if Jesus is right, their use of force is wrong and their reasons for wanting to use it are beside the point.

Yet the church as an institution is bound together by doctrine —moreover, a doctrine inaugurated by the sword. And theology, to the extent that it serves the church, is designed primarily to explain rather than to challenge doctrine. Even the theologian who proclaims so radical a notion as "the death of God" retains, through his affiliation with seminary and church, a tacit endorsement of the general structure of dogma. And this institutional relationship, in the absence of a detailed disclaimer on his part, sets a limit upon his freedom of inquiry. On its face, it is an anomaly to be a "theologian" if God is dead in any final sense, and the anomaly will be resolved by discovering a "God beyond God" with the aid of other doctrines from the early centuries. Likewise, it is daring but ecclesiastically acceptable to attempt to transplant doctrines from the soil of Greek philosophy to that of Whitehead or Heidegger. The risk assumed in these enterprises, however, is philosophical rather than theological. To speak, in such a context, of a "radical reformation," "renewal" and the like is merely to speak of new ways of operating an old system of ideas and practices. Rudolf Bultmann's demythologizing enterprise, for all its scholarly boldness, accomplishes not much more than to affirm the doctrine of the Resurrection while acknowledging that, so far as we can determine, Jesus' corpse was not actually resuscitated—hence Easter can be freed of superstition and remain one of the church's three most holy days. When the dust of controversy has settled, it will be seen that what seemed radical was merely novel; the roots of orthodoxy not only remain but have been given new life, accommodated to soil that had seemed infertile.

Theology is not unconcerned with truth, and to denounce it as false because of its institutional bias is excessive. Indeed, at the center of its concerns the truth can scarcely be discerned except by means of theology itself, or by intuitive means, by faith, which can be scrutinized but not quantitatively assayed. Nevertheless, it tends to have the character of an ideology, in Karl Mannheim's understanding of that term—it is so structured as to prejudice truth in favor of the institution that is held to

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

be instrumental to the furtherance of truth. And there is no way out. There is a complete impasse so long as theology remains committed to the institution; it cannot entertain the risk of staking out positions in advance of the church and expect the church to heed it. And even to state the matter in these terms is merely to reaffirm the symbiosis.

Yet among the possibilities that exist for man in the modern world are these—that religion is of vital importance, that something derivable from Christianity provides a key to life's meaning, and that the church is ill-suited to emphasize what is most needed. It may be that theology is needed and the church is not. It may be that the church is in need of reformation and renewal, which it cannot get from its own theologians because of their fated ideological role. It may even be the case that the church must begin to look elsewhere if it is to cut through the maze of dogma and find the truth—not some abstract truth but the kernel of salvation, the truth proclaimed by Jesus.

I cannot be indifferent to the church or to its theologians. Yet beyond the institution and its adherents, there are God and man and the perennial dialogue between them, a crucial part of which is found in the New Testament and specifically in the figure and image of Jesus. No institution can patent or sequester that dialogue; no creed can define or circumscribe it. Man may or may not need the church, and God may or may not use it; but if God is real and if his covenant with man means anything, the church is optional for him; he is not its captive or its property, and its formulas are only as efficacious as he wills.

There exists, in contemporary church thought, a concept of a "theology of the laity," which has two emphases: a kind of simplification of standard academic theology in terms understandable to the layman; and, through this simplified medium, indoctrination of the layman regarding his role in the church. The aim is a modest and cautious one, to raise the woefully inadequate level of the layman's understanding of what the church is about in the twentieth century, to make theology intelligible to him, hence to broaden the base of support for policies undertaken by the church's leadership, even to give him a share of responsibility for those policies.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

John A. T. Robinson, the Anglican Bishop of Woolwich, has vigorously criticized this concept for not going far enough. Advocating "a genuinely lay theology," he sees this as arising from lay institutes, evangelical academies, ecumenical centers. Contrasting it with the theologies of earlier times, which were pastoral (or as he says "episcopal"), monastic (or mystical-ascetic), or scholastic (erudition for its own sake), he designates "lay theology" as that which "is impelled by the needs of the *laos,* or whole people of God, to *be* the Church *in* the world." This change of theological orientation is to accompany a serious reform of the organizational structure of the church itself. Instead of a "cultic organism" as in the Middle Ages or a "confessional assembly" as in the Reformation and after, he envisions with Gibson Winter "*the prophetic fellowship* as the only relevant form of 'the servant Church in a secularized world.'" Academic theology, says Robinson in his book, *The New Reformation?,* has been a theology too shut off from the world, too much geared to the professional ministry, too little focused on the present. Lay theology would emphasize: twentieth-century church history; a theology of missions stressing engagement with twentieth-century secular thought and society; contemporary systematic theology such as Tillich's; and contextual ethics. It would also revive natural theology as contrasted with dogmatic theology, and give it a central role along with the other kinds, although this is admittedly risky.

The note that Robinson wishes to strike is not only that theology should have a *lay* but also, and perhaps more important, a *secular* thrust, engaging the church more emphatically with the world in every sense. For the church, if it is to survive and justify its existence, must minister to the world and in the world. Yet it remains the church—and the church must not be reduced to evangelical academies and lay centers, which are to remain for some time only outposts of the established institutional structure. Or, in some sense, perhaps the new lay theology is to be regarded as not so much a venture as a controlled experiment, a kind of hothouse radicalism:

> [It] would in fact be a disastrous impoverishment if such lay theology were forced to come to fruition in isolation from the traditional centers

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

of theological engagement, the councils of the Church, the religious, i.e. monastic communities, the universities and the seminaries. For unless it is planted in these and can draw upon their resources, it will be stunted for lack of depth of earth. Nevertheless, if these bodies are to take it into their systems they must expect it to disturb many of their presuppositions.

Robinson may not have intended it so, but his plea for a new reformation turns out to be an appeal to the church to lift itself by its own bootstraps, to achieve a more intelligent and streamlined orthodoxy through better use of its extant resources. Nothing basic is risked: churchmen will become better Christians by using better methods; they will be kept in the church by undertaking to serve those outside it; and the church will prosper because the walls come down to give it access to the world. As an ecclesiastic, the Bishop-theologian may be pardoned for doing so, but his overriding concern is a strategy for the survival of the church. He takes it for granted that the church can and must lead the way. Its servanthood is not only self-conscious but too patently "official."

From such a viewpoint there is, of course, every reason to turn to Martin Buber, to Nietzsche, to Freud and perhaps even to Karl Marx for instruction in being a "good Christian," for developing skills in coming to grips with the modern world. One may even put the creeds in a drawer somewhere, turning one's attention to Camus and Sartre, if this will aid the church and give one a sense of contemporaneity—but the result will be little more than "implications for the Gospel" or "challenges to relevance." One will sound different, one will sing the tune to a new beat and even improvise on it, but underneath the atonality it is still "Onward, Christian Soldiers." One will make Christianity secular, existential, humanistic, dialectical, even atheistic, but it will still be somehow doctrinally untransformed and, above all, churchly. The new reformation, such as it is, enunciates a new pluralism for the church's ideology and technique, expanding the range of theology and institutional structure while at the same time reaffirming an essential unity of churchmen predicated on embarrassing but intact dogmas. Thus we are to assume that in some sense Billy Graham, Pope Paul VI and Norman

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Vincent Peale are bound together in Christ's truth, along with Chiang Kai-shek and Dorothy Day, while the likes of Martin Buber and Bertrand Russell are benighted outsiders or at best "honorary Christians."

"Yes," the liberal Christian will admit, "we have our differences and our black sheep, and we are humble and contrite about it." But that is not the point. The point is the ability to say "we." And in this consists the church's true dilemma—the dilemma posed by the very categories of orthodox and heretical, and at a deeper level by those of truth and reconciliation. There is a very great presumption in thinking that the institutional church has anything to do with either the *koinonia* or the *ekklēsia* of the New Testament, or that any of these is necessarily the "mystical body of Christ" or anything like it. Too much of the evidence is contrary. And what are we to say if Martin Buber's Ihud more clearly resembles the spirit of *koinonia* than does Last Baptist Church of Burnt Cross, Mississippi? Shall "we" mumble about the mysteries of God and not question the patent blasphemy of a doctrine of the church that makes such a misalignment inevitable?

The answer, in part, consists in a needed secularization of the church itself—more precisely its *desacralization*. The church is a social institution, nothing more. It is not even Christian except in a nominal sense; it is no more Christian than the Democratic Party is democratic, although these hold respectively Christianity and democracy as desiderata. And what of Christianity as a desideratum? In fact, is it so—or may it not be only one of several ways of seeking to be truly human? And how far can the institution promote the goal, if in fact it can do so at all?

> What stirs me incessantly [wrote Bonhoeffer in 1944] is the question of what Christianity really is or even who Christ really is. The time when one could tell men everything in words, whether theological or pious, is over; likewise the time of inwardness and conscience, and that means precisely the time of religion altogether. We are facing a completely religionless time; men simply cannot now be religious any more. Even those who honestly call themselves "religious" don't practice it in any way; hence presumably they mean something quite different by "religion." Our whole 1900-year Christian preaching and theology was erected upon the "religious *a priori*" of men. "Christianity" has always

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

been a form (perhaps the true form) of "religion." But if now, one fine day, it becomes clear that this *"a priori"* doesn't exist at all but was a historically conditioned and transitory form of human expression, and if man actually becomes radically religionless . . . what does that mean for Christianity?

What *does* this mean for Christianity as a religion? To Bonhoeffer it meant its death and rebirth into a new, nonreligious form—and subsequent theologians of the past two decades have seen this to mean commitment without cult, a new emphasis on witness and involvement, maintaining a private discipline of prayer and a public life of selfless service to one's fellowmen. This is what Bonhoeffer increasingly saw Christianity to be; and he came to see Christ as "the man for others" in the midst of life, a prototype for anyone who would be a Christian in a world that has achieved such maturity that it can dispense with the God who created it.

Bonhoeffer might have said with autobiographical veracity simply that *he* had become unable to communicate his faith to others in words, or to regard it as valid when turned inward. One is tempted to imagine an incident one day in the prison when a fellow inmate says to him, "Why the hell don't you shut up! You don't know anything about God and you're not helping any of us with your fancy talk. If you want to be a Christian, just *act* like one and never mind the gibberish." His life and career had been shaped by both academic theology and the piety of the Prussian aristocrat, and the tension between these and the hard realities of a tough, profane world comprise the engine of his thought in his last letters from prison. He had, until his imprisonment, been a leading participant in the church's encounter with the realities of the modern world, yet it is astonishing to what little extent even such a man was affected by this encounter. Even though he had spent time in Barcelona, New York and London, the boundaries of his mind remained remarkably provincial, for his participation remained predominantly that of a German academic visitor to academic or churchly enclaves—a little like the American tourist who stays at American hotels all over the world. He is highly conversant with Luther and knows his Greek New Testament; he prefers Adalbert Stifter to

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Rilke; he is inordinately fond of the good old Pietist hymns of Paul Gerhardt (1607-1676). Except for Dostoevski, Goethe, Kant and Nicolai Hartmann, his secular reading is on a decidedly bourgeois plane—Gotthelf, Stifter, Immermann, Fontane, Keller, Jean Paul, writers scarcely known to the non-German reader and figuring as minor authors even within the German literary world. It is not entirely facetious to say that most of his life was spent with comfortable suburbanites—even under the shadow of Hitler, in the pastors' training center at Finkenwalde and in his activities in the patrician resistance movement, which attempted to kill the dictator.

Bonhoeffer had been in prison for a full year before the radical change in his thinking began, and clearly he himself was alarmed, feeling himself cut off from his friends. The words quoted above represent his first real confrontation of the questions that were to preoccupy him until his death a year later,* and they are preceded by these:

My theological thinking with its consequences would surprise you or perhaps even make you at least uneasy, and in this I really miss you now, for I wouldn't know who else I could even tell that it means a clarification for me.

It was a fearful step, and Bonhoeffer was only too conscious of it, for as he went on to say, "Our whole 'Christianity' up till now is deprived of its foundation." Yet he felt that something of paramount value was to be salvaged from the wreckage, and he tried by fits and starts to make a stab at the task of developing a "nonreligious" Christianity. He was trying to make a new start, jettisoning past conceptions yet unable really to break loose from them—as when he asserts that "for the Christian" it is necessary to have an absolute basis of hope; "Christ, our hope" is the power of "our" life, while others can rely on illusion. This parochialism persists, and it is convenient for those churchmen who wish to press Bonhoeffer's more radical insights into the service of the church, blending them with his conventionality rather than following the new direction wherever it might

* Bonhoeffer was imprisoned in April 1943. The letter quoted was written in April 1944, and his radical thought is fragmentally embodied in about a dozen letters written during the next four months. There is an eight-month gap from August until his death in April 1945.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

lead. Significantly, Robinson's recourse is almost entirely to the Bonhoeffer of April 1944 and after—and what is disappointing is his unwillingness to follow forward from that point. But even more disappointing is the attempt of many others to exploit *this* Bonhoeffer in a rhetorical way to give ornamentation to the Bonhoeffer of the Finkenwalde period, thus smothering the only really new insights with an outworn idol of the man himself, and missing the point that such phrases as "for the Christian" are hangovers from the past, not guideposts for the future. Many of Bonhoeffer's points are intriguing but inconclusive: "On 'egoism' of the Christian ('selfless self-love') etc. next. . . . Too much altruism is oppressive and pretentious! 'Egoism' can be selfless, unpretentious!"* But the next four letters are devoid of theological interest, the fifth goes off on a new tangent only obliquely related to the question of egoism and the question is swallowed up in banal analogy and theological woolgathering—and the six letters in all account for two whole weeks out of the four-month period of creativity.

To the extent that his amorphous and elusive structure of thought can be summarized, it consists of little more than questions and catchwords. The world has achieved a maturity in which it no longer needs God to explain anything. Yet the world "must be understood better than it understands itself," and the Bible, myths and all, can provide this understanding—but "religion" must not be a precondition of the faith by which the Bible's truth is made operative. In other words the Gospel and Christ must themselves be secularized and thus made accessible to contemporary, religionless man. Man's redemption is not achieved by his being saved from the world after death, but rather he is "resurrected" in the midst of this-worldly life, and the transformation that this means involves no repudiation of selfhood. That which is "wholly other" and which we have thought of as "the beyond" or "the world to come" is not far away but very near, yet not merely in the sense of a private reas-

* Reginald Fuller translates the last two sentences thus: "Too much altruism is a bore, and makes too many claims. There is a kind of egoism which can be more selfless, and make less claims upon us." See Bonhoeffer, *Letters and Papers From Prison* (New York: Macmillan, 1962), p. 169. The meaning is clear enough in the original but it has been "helped" in a different direction by the translator's interpretation.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

surance. The God who is thus "with us" is the same God who forsook Jesus on the cross, and he likewise forsakes us (remember, this is written by a man who is to be executed). Part of the world's maturity consists in its abandoning the idea of a powerful God, the God who controls events and rewards the religious with his favors. The real God is somehow present amidst suffering, available to faith, as shown in Jesus; and one does not achieve this faith by trying to live a holy life. One must abandon the attempt to make oneself a saint or a churchman or a righteous man, and just take life in stride, responding rather than manipulating. Do what is right, supported only by God's commandment and your faith, for only in the deed is there freedom.

The foregoing omits, I think, nothing of importance in Bonhoeffer's last letters. In August he drafted an outline for a new book, which he never wrote, and I summarize it here:

1. A Stocktaking of Christianity
   a) Man has largely won control over nature but is threatened by the dangers of organization. He needs spiritual vitality to cope with the problem of human nature.
   b) Religion has decayed and "God" is superfluous.
   c) The Protestant Church is on the defensive, unwilling to risk itself for humanity. The vocabulary of tradition is a dead weight, hard to understand. Personal faith is in decline.
   d) Popular morality, for example, sexual morality.

2. What is actually Christian faith?
   a) Worldliness and God.
   b) Who is God? Not general God-belief in God's omnipotence, *et cetera.* Jesus' "being-there-for-others" is the experience of transcendence, the freedom-from-self from which omnipotence, omniscience, omnipresence derive. Faith is participation in this being of Jesus. (Incarnation, cross, resurrection.) "Our relationship to God is no 'religious' one to an imaginably highest, mightiest, best being," but a new life in "existence for others" in collaboration with the being of Jesus. Not the unending, unreachable problem, but whatever is near at any moment. Man living on the basis of transcendence.
   c) Interpretation of biblical concepts from here on. (Creation, fall, reconciliation, repentance, faith, *vita nuova,* last things.)
   d) Cultus and "religion."

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

e) What do we really believe, that is, so that we stake our life on it? What *must* I believe? is a false question, an outdated controversial question arising from interconfessional disputes. The faith of Christianity and the Bible does not stand or fall with such disputes as those between Catholics and Protestants or Lutherans and Calvinists. To say it's the church's, not mine, is a priestly subterfuge that evades the honest question of what our real personal belief is.

3. Conclusions from the above

The church is only the church when it exists for others. In order to make a beginning it must give all property to those in dire need. The pastors should live exclusively on the free-will offerings of the congregations. (These points, be it noted, are made in a country where the church is supported through public taxation.) It must tell men of every occupation what life with Christ is, what it means to "exist for others." Especially will *our* church have to oppose the vices of *hubris,* worship of power, envy and humbug as the roots of all evil. It must speak of moderation, genuineness, trust, faithfulness, constancy, patience, propriety, humility, modesty and contentedness. It will not do to underestimate the significance of human "example"; not through concepts but through "example" its word gets emphasis and strength. Further, the revision of the creeds, of Christian apologetics, of ministerial training and leadership.

The direction of Bonhoeffer's last thoughts is toward a new kind of down-to-earth, here-and-now Christian humanism. The implications are all there in truncated form, illustrated in such key phrases as "mature world" and "existence for others," but right down to the end they are clogged by the stifling vocabulary of tradition, a vocabulary to which Bonhoeffer was committed by his training and milieu. Moreover, like so much of academic theology, there is an almost exclusive dealing in abstractions to the neglect of empirical considerations, specific and concrete examples. There is little if any sense of growth, flux, development or dynamic, and consequently too little of the "how" of things to make their "why" relevant. Bonhoeffer spent too much of his life talking to fellow theologians and fellow churchmen; hence it was difficult for him to see beyond a given set of vocabularies and options offered by the various churchly traditions, and virtually all

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

of his contributions consist of modifications of tradition. His doctoral dissertation, *Sanctorum Communio,* written seventeen years before the crucial prison letters, is supposed to be a dialogue between sociological and theological views of the church, but in reality it is a monologue in which sociological *ideas* are merely fitted into a theological structure—ideas, moreover, derived from the most theoretical and abstract of the sociologists. Bonhoeffer was ill-suited to converse with a Weber, a Mannheim, a Tawney or a Mills. Yet just such a dialogue on *their* terms would have been the intellectual equivalent of his risk-taking activities in the plot against Hitler. There was a gulf between such action and his theology—not necessarily an incompatibility, but an absence of bridgework.

What do we really believe—honestly, personally, without reference to the church or the Bible or the traditional interpretations? Has it anything to do with Christ in the sense of "existence for others"? Can we begin without "Christian" presuppositions, without the "leap of faith," and discover an inherent validity in the Gospel? If we say, *by definition,* that Christ makes men good, can we then say, "John is good; therefore Christ is in him or with him," without asking whether John is a Christian or has ever heard of Christianity? Had he continued to move in the direction of secularization, Bonhoeffer would have had to raise fundamental questions about the church: assuming that "the church" is *by definition* "the communion of saints" or even the primary vehicle of Christianity, what reason is there for asserting that an institution's claim to this status is valid? Does it have any real, applicable meaning? What was the Confessing Church's justification for breaking away from the Nazi-dominated "German Christians"? And may not a Kierkegaard, for example, be "the church" and repudiate the Danish State Church as a mere masquerade?

The point in history at which the world became so mature that it no longer needed the "God hypothesis," or at which God "died," is hard to locate with any precision. The full realization of the dawning of a secular, post-Christian era is very recent. Within this century, religion collapsed mightily in Russia, and

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

has ebbed more gradually throughout the rest of Europe. Western-sponsored missions have been deflated throughout the world, and the places where people may be counted on to go to church are areas like the American South, Spain and South Africa.

After the death of Bach, there were few composers who wrote sacred music and still fewer of any status who devoted much of their time to it. Except for Gerard Manley Hopkins and perhaps Thomas Merton, very little Christian religious poetry of serious literary quality has been written since before the French Revolution. It is not a matter of a decline from some golden era of the Middle Ages or the Reformation; it is rather the cultural parallel or expression of the process in which, as Bonhoeffer puts it, God has been edged off the map. There is no Dante for this era, no Grünewald or Bosch—and the market is thinning out for the ecclesiastical hack artists, poets and composers who have accommodated the debased taste of the bourgeois church since Kierkegaard's time.

The conventional view held by those theologians who are interested enough to care is, roughly, that the stream of religious expression has simply been cut off except for a few "Christian" writers who belong to the church, and for the rest something relevant to Christian faith may emerge from dialogue between the church and the wholly secularized artist. The theologian of culture will probe for dimensions of meaning and value in Picasso's "Guernica" or Genet's *The Blacks* and perhaps try to relate these to points of theological doctrine—or look for Christian answers or equivalents to Camus and Sartre.

The odd man out is the writer or thinker who is neither a certified Christian nor a certified atheist, but who has dared to advance his own personal religious faith, even his own personal vision of God or Jesus without benefit of church or clergy. Such persons are not playing the game. For them, religion may or may not be dead, but instead of disappearing it has taken a new turn. If it has any "ideological" function, it is not that of the church, and sometimes tacitly or obliquely it may be a protest against the church. They represent a step beyond the "lay theology" of Bishop Robinson, and a serious expression of real belief, often reshaping and extending the images and myths of the Bible.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Jewish Humor and American Life

EARL ROVIT

QUITE CLEARLY, THE ONLY OBSERVER who would be qualified to comment on the complicated relationship of Jewish humor to contemporary American life would be an American Jew with a superb sense of humor, a delicate comprehension of the American character in its variegated historical metamorphoses, and a profound intuition of those precipices of meaning where humor and faith shade off into the macabre, the pathological, the surreal and the banal. Such a man would also have to possess in abundance that left-handed gift of the gods that is called in Yiddish, *chutzpah*—a misfortune of temperament for which the Greek term, *hubris,* is, at best, a somewhat weak and mollycoddled approximation. I have waited in vain for such an observer to appear. Perhaps he became garroted on the Nietzchean tightrope that is supposed to span the primordial abyss. Or, more likely, he married the daughter of a wealthy businessman and put his childish toys away. At any rate, I can wait no longer for him. Pride forces me to offer myself in his place as a voluntary sacrifice of scholarly immolation. And if certain of my observations are in some ways faulty or excessively partial, I console myself with the wise aphorism of a learned Detroit rabbi: "A Cadillac has four wheels and it stumbles."

Nor will it be a digression to confess at the outset that my understanding of American-Jewish life has been constantly confused by a recurrent illusion that I keep shedding like a serpent's skin, only to regrow in a dark thoughtless time. As a young boy, cradled like a jellied egg in the security of my family, I knew that whatever unpleasantness might lurk in the external Gentile world, all Jews, at least, were good, intelligent and hu-

✪ EARL ROVIT is author of the novel, *The Player King.* His new novel, *A Far Cry,* will appear this spring.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

morous. My poor egg was cracked years and years ago, and I learned that like everyone else, Jews were all kinds of things—not necessarily good, intelligent and humorous merely because they were born as Jews. And yet an early illusion refuses to die easily; it submerges itself to thrash around in the soup of one's emotions like a fish that is all energetic tail. It stirs the current on which our thoughts will flow and it provides the turbulence by which we measure our dissatisfactions with life and ourselves.

The good, the intelligent and the humorous; a significant triad, no? Not, you will notice, the good, the true and the beautiful, which is the average American's traditional birthright as a foundling of the Romantic Revolution. There is a subtle but far-reaching difference here between these triads. Keats's exhortation is the expression of a profoundly Gentile faith—Christian and Greek, Catholic and Protestant, certainly sublime, but patently unacceptable to Job or Spinoza, to Freud or Kafka. The good, the intelligent and the humorous—this is something else, something more acerb, more rational, more profane, less democratic, but, I think, more grounded in what is humanly possible. What I think of as the Jewish triad swings away from an abstract transcendental system of values to those concrete qualities of personality that can be learned or painfully acquired. It shifts its locus from the divine realms of spirit to character, from implacable standards to human modes of behavior, from the resonances of spontaneous revelation where all men are potential saints to earthbound strategies of life survival. I cannot find truth in the twentieth century, but I can try to cultivate my intelligence in order to discern how little I know. I cannot fashion a beautiful life in a world that my reason insists is ugly, but I can learn to laugh. I can even learn that, under special circumstances, laughter may be a form of prayer, certainly no less efficacious than the humorless variety, and probably emanating from the same source. And, indeed, I doubt that my triad is peculiar to me. Whether it is a larger European inheritance (one thinks of Kierkegaard, of Dostoevski) or a quasi-Jewish importation to American life, I believe that I am nowhere more a child of my time than in my adherence to this triangular faith.

Alas, all Jews are not, like myself, good, intelligent and hu-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

morous, but in recent years there has been increasing comment on an emergent quality in American life that is purported to be a product of Jewishness—that is, that intangible pungency of atmosphere that is rather nebulously referred to as "Jewish humor." What a quixotic label that is! It pretends to describe in sober sociological tones, but it points nowhere and everywhere. Is there such a thing as The American Jew anyway? Some characterological amalgam of Williamsburg Hasidic and Shaker Heights Unitarian, Orthodox and atheist, passionate secularist of innumerable civic meetings and the assimilatedly indifferent? What monstrous portmanteau word could be fixed on such a creature? Only the Messiah could take such a form. And, despair added to despair, what is humor? (What is humor? Humor is when you laugh. And when do you laugh? You laugh when you don't cry. And what is Jewish humor? You laugh while you cry a little.) No, this is good enough for Sholem Aleichem or *The Fiddler on the Roof* perhaps, but too disingenuous for a people that must constantly remember six million of its slaughtered dead.

Jewish humor disembarked in America at Ellis Island with the immigrational waves of East European Jewry between 1880 and 1915. In its Ur-form it was a product of shtetl-life, intransigently Yiddish, severely defined by the accumulated defense mechanisms of survival in a tightly interlocked communal system where the family was not only the central unit, but the unit that was elastically expandable to encompass the entire community. "The Children of Israel" was more than a biblical epithet. It was a phrase of kinship (Israel's children) and a severe sociological definition. Outside the large family was an alien life—a shark-infested multi-Protestant and Catholic water inherently or potentially hostile to Jewish life. Alien food, alien women, alien customs, alien ideals. Outside the movable shtetl nothing was exactly kosher. One's neighbors, one's government, the very culture within which one breathed—these operated by motives that were different and hence dangerous. After all, the Jewish immigrants had been conditioned for centuries by pogrom and persecution to some form of ghetto life. Their relationship to the outside world had been constrained to a narrowly restricted buying-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

and-selling connection with their neighbors, and everyone knows that a customer is always a secret enemy who must be outwitted by cunning, flattery and veiled intimidation—that is, by all the talents of the mind when the mind is unaccompanied by force. The initial Jewish adaptation to the American scene was a naïve attempt to re-create the old conditions of city life in this baffling New World. And Jewish humor remained defensive and private, a reserve for one's own bitter amusement in the homely curses muttered under the breath in Yiddish that the customer or employer couldn't possibly understand. "Of course, Mrs. Morgan—(You should bury your head in the earth like an onion.)—But naturally, you're absolutely right—(You should only swell up like a mountain.)—"

But America is a vast country and even the newly landed immigrants found themselves possessed of the volatile mobility of the Russian boyars. The closed shtetl-system was doomed from the beginning by the awesome capacity of American life to absorb all of its citizens—at least, its white citizens—and to offer them undreamed-of prosperity. The religious training in Talmud Torah could not compete with a compulsory system of free mass education and open libraries. The synagogues and benevolent societies were unable to cope with a phenomenally rising standard of living and an equally phenomenal rise in religious indifference. The years preceding and immediately following World War One were years of great intellectual ferment. The slogans of emancipation were thick in the air and economic prosperity promised to translate the airy slogans into hard reality. Nor is it an insignificant fact that the most articulate American Jews of the first part of the twentieth century—the men who came to control the ideological policies of the major Yiddish newspapers and the burgeoning trade unions—tended to be Socialists and/or Zionists. Neither position gave more than short shrift to the orthodoxies of communal ritual life. Both positions labored for the establishment of a Promised Land and both insisted on political-empirical means in arriving at their goals. The age-old pieties of family worship had little place in the fiery dreams that exerted a tremendous weight of influence on the entire American Jewish community.

Hence, after World War One and the Russian Revolution,

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the typical American Jew was unwittingly caught up in a foredoomed struggle between his traditional communal insularity and the alluring fluidity of the outside world. Almost in spite of himself (and frequently burdened by a bad conscience), he became committed to seeking a better material life for himself and his children, doubtless without fully realizing that the price he would pay would be the virtual loss of his traditions and his religious identity. It is, after all, an old American story. While his Irish-American neighbors found a congenial strategy of upward movement in consolidating the political power of the urban communities in which they lived, the Jew resorted to his experience in merchandising (a term that can extend from door-to-door peddling to the amassing of great fortunes in retailing and wholesaling), as well as to the individual upward thrust of education. No, all Jews are not intelligent, but American Jews had both a heritage of adherence to the charisma of education and a fantastic internal pressure to take advantage of the free public school system that was miraculously open to them. If they were, as they had been called, "The People of the Book," they would use books to secure a good life for themselves. One by one the learned professions grudgingly opened their restricted quotas to the avalanche of pale-faced, worn-out at thirty, emancipated Jews who had qualified to become dentists, doctors, lawyers, university professors. "My son, the doctor," is not just a Jewish joke; it is close to being a Jewish disease, contagious like the measles, but not so easily quarantinable.

But there exists in all groups of people an urge not only to improve their material and individual conditions, but also to impress their indigenous stamp on the larger life that surrounds them. And this is especially true when that stamp of group identity is at the point of becoming a nostalgic reminiscence. At least this has usually been so in America. Politics was by and large a closed arena to the Jew—except in New York City and in such astonishing aridities as Arizona where a man of Jewish ancestry can be no more curious or Jewish than the ubiquitous cactus. The bastions of finance were securely closed to the Jew. From the professions of law and medicine, little direct influence could be exerted on the tempo and color of American life. But

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the entertainment industry was something else, and while there was spirited competition from the waggish Irish, the Jewish entertainer invaded vaudeville before the First World War, and by 1950 had become an almost saturated commodity in the radio, television and the movies. From the old burlesque circuits, from Potash and Perlmutter and "Cohen on the Telephone," through the great Broadway age of Jolson, Cantor, Irving Berlin, Fannie Brice and the Gershwins, through the thirties and forties of the Marx Brothers, Milton Berle, Danny Kaye, Jack Benny, *et cetera,* the American Jew came to possess a sizable leasehold on popular American comic entertainment.

The situations and characters they exploited were too richly idiosyncratic to be simply categorized, but distinct traces of the older Yiddish shtetl-sources can still be seen in some of the stock types that were seized upon and endlessly refurbished. The schlemiel, the schnorrer, infinite combinations of the two, and a type generally known in the old Catskill Borscht Belt as the *meshuggah*—the wild, irresponsible, disconnected buffoon who oscillates between the frenetic edges of obscenity and tearful sentimentality. The Jewish entertainer became master of a savage dialogue with his audience: "Go ahead, stupids, laugh! Go ahead, laugh! What you can't see is that I'm laughing my head off at *you* and you're paying me for the privilege!" Essentially, to become an entertainer, the Jew had merely to change his role as salesman a little bit. His new commodity was his own stage personality, and the old muttered curses and insults were now made audible and scarcely less direct. The customer remained the same—the great alien Protestant audience, guileless, easily gulled, of thickened wit, but always a potential danger in its resources of sluggish strength. There is inevitably a lubricant of hostility in all humor, I suppose. At least it is very difficult to imagine the sound of laughter without the surprise invitation to ridicule, but Jewish vaudeville humor has been markedly parsimonious in its compensating offerings of love. It has been profligate in assuming gestures of outrageous grotesquerie. It has delighted in playing the fool in order to make its audiences make fools of themselves. But its double-facings of absurd exposure and sly or open insult have rarely been mitigated by a passion

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

to extol what is right, or a compassion to love what is incurably wrong.

The situation has not really changed very much since 1950. With the increasing sophistication of television, with the rebirth of vaudeville in the emergence of the "stand-up comedians" like Mort Sahl, Shelly Berman or Lennie Bruce, with the massive circulation of quasi-humorous magazines like *Playboy* and *Mad,* the lines of influence have become slightly more complicated without substantially changing. The national advertising agencies and public relations firms have become an integral part of the entertainment industry, accepting without protest the well-worn comic types and situations. One can in America be exhorted to buy a beer, give up smoking, vote for a Senator, drive safely, be mildly amused by a television clown, or be shocked by the verbal license of a nightclub comedian without much of an alteration in the accents and nuances of what was once the private property of a Yiddish wedding jester.

It is impossible to explain how this came about—why, that is, Yiddish humor (defensive-aggressive, earthy Yiddish humor) should have proved so successful in Protestant America. Doubtless there are many factors ranging from the economic ownership of the production and distribution of entertainment media to the peculiar need that Jews may have in being patrons of the entertainment arts. Among possible explanations might be suggested the very fact that America *is* a Protestant country. There is, of course, a vigorous theoretical ideal of *protest* running deep in the fabric of American history; and humor, by its very nature, is of the party of the opposition. It is also true that the Yiddish schlemiel-figure and the schnorrer have their native American counterparts in such eighteenth- and nineteenth-century folk creations as Brother Jonathan and Poor Richard, on the one hand, and The Confidence Man, on the other. Our psychoanalytical friends may also want to note that Yiddish humor, incontrovertibly involved with the physical—with the body and bodily functions—may at one time have provided a minor release of tensions for a society that had been trained either to ignore the body entirely or to improve it by an energetic course in hygiene. (The possible sadomasochistic elements, the latent homo-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

sexuality, and the rechanneling of sociological guilt are matters that I gladly leave to those scholars whose needs in these directions are more urgent than my own.)

But more than this, however, I wonder whether the defensive-aggressive dynamism of Jewish humor may not have fulfilled a more subtle function for a population that was historically lacking in the rigid structures of society and that, metaphysically, posited the lonely soul floating in isolation before the stark unregarding eye of God. Jewish humor automatically assumed a society—a human contact point between speaker and listener, between entertainer and spectator. Even an insult is a passable bridge between man and man. It is probably true that the central unit of the Jewish community, the family, has badly crumbled both sociologically and psychologically, but it is invoked nostalgically at the moment of the pratfall, in the riotous hysteria of the boffo punch line. At its best, humor is one of the ways in which human beings can attain a meager sense of their own brotherhood; and, at its best, the ironic insult of Jewish humor includes slightly more of humanity than it rejects.

But even this, I fear, is too optimistic a note to describe the contemporary condition. It certainly seems true that Yiddish humor has become a significant ingredient in American life, a natural resource for thousands who are unaware of the exotic sources of the commodity they so naturally embrace. Its bittersweet sentimentality and its delight in grotesque irony have been able to blend easily with the older tradition of American "frontier humor" (the tall tale, the inverted criticism) as well as with the "outsider's" humor that is found in Irish, Italian and Negro comic strategies. (Jackie Gleason, Jimmy Durante and Sammy Davis, Jr., are good examples of the extent to which Yiddish humor has been both an influence and a beneficiary in the creation of American comic types.) But for all the successful Jewish clowns from Mike Sachs to Mike Nichols, there is not one that can stand comparison to the lonely comic genius of a Chaplin. For all the shrewd irreverent commentators on the State of the Nation, the nearest Jewish replica that we can find to place against the giant shape of Mark Twain would be—you should pardon the expression—Harry Golden. And although

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the last twenty years have witnessed a magnificent florescence of genuinely comic Jewish writers—Bellow, Malamud, Roth, Salinger, Heller, *et cetera*—none of their books, insofar as they have aimed at satire, has had anything of the social power of Sinclair Lewis' novels. (George F. Babbitt quickly became a universal American type; Moses E. Herzog is inevitably a foreign curiosity.)

Perhaps Jewish humor has succeeded too easily in adapting itself to American life, and in its popular success in the mass media, it may have sacrificed its own fulfillment. Humor, after all, has to be against something—a concrete injustice, a specific affectation or hypocrisy. It is a strategy of intelligence moving into action, either to protect something of its own that it judges to be good, or to attack something that it deems to be bad. I wonder whether Jewish humor may not have allowed itself to accept without struggle the consensus of bourgeois ideals in Protestant America at the expense of its own intelligence. At any rate, merchandising has joined hands again and again with humor to denigrate intelligence and provide shallow, marketable entertainment. Individual Jews have made notable contributions in the causes of unpopular dissent in the twentieth century, but Jewish humor has been suspiciously silent on the major controversial issues that foster the dialectics for defining justice in practice. Jewish humor has lagged behind, waiting until it is fashionable to decry this evil, to expose that injustice.

The old show-business mottoes, "Give them what they want!" and "Leave them laughing!," seem to me to be merely theatrical equivalents of the equally false and hypocritical, "The customer is always right." Such a principle of salesmanship breaks my precious triad, separates intelligence from humor, and shamefully degrades the good. Perhaps the Jew must become more American before he can attain that security of citizenship that will enable him to afford the "insider's" disgust with the collective condition that sometimes results in great humane humor. But perhaps as he becomes more American, he will cease to be Jewish enough to maintain a balance between the gross realities he perceives and the ideals that convict his soul.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Science, A Wellspring of Our Discontent

WALTER ORR ROBERTS

SCIENCE HAS MANY IMAGES. And it has many spokesmen. A century and a half ago Goethe said of science, "To one man it is the highest thing, a heavenly goddess; to another it is a productive and proficient cow, who supplies him with butter." On TV a scientist may be a mad genius, or a man in a white lab coat, or an iron-willed and hard-driving researcher without time for or interest in his wife or children. On TV science is space rockets, computers and miracle coatings that make razor blades last longer, cut closer.

But I believe that in searching for a spokesman for science, I could scarcely find a wiser man to quote here than Warren Weaver, who wrote in 1960:

> Science is not technology, it is not gadgetry, it is not some mysterious cult, it is not a great mechanical monster. Science is an adventure of the human spirit. It is essentially an artistic enterprise, stimulated largely by curiosity, served largely by disciplined imagination, and based largely on faith in the reasonableness, order, and beauty of the universe of which man is part.

In other words, science, like music or fine art, is a wellspring of the divine discontent that stirs man to seek more of life than merely to eat and to sleep. And that discontent is flamed higher by the partner of science, advancing technology, through which we can realistically contemplate the practical achievement of the highest of ideals for the condition of man.

✪ WALTER ORR ROBERTS, director of the National Center for Atmospheric Research in Boulder, Colorado, is a solar astronomer and former professor of astrogeophysics at the University of Colorado. He presented this annual Phi Beta Kappa-Sigma Xi address before the American Association for the Advancement of Science in December, 1966.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

To me, the true significance of the space age, this accelerating age of science and technology in which we now live, is that it is beginning to lead us to wonder, once again, about the nature and purpose of man, about what constitutes the good life and the good society. The space age is bringing philosophy once again to the center of the scene, making it as important as ever it was in the Golden Age of Greece. This is so because the products of science and technology offer us the prospect, at last, of satisfying the material needs of all of the people of earth, if we but have the wit, and the will to organize and to share our resources.

Moreover, in today's world, concern over the nature and purpose of man need no longer be confined to a small elite with the leisure and the interest. Today it can become the domain of an ever-growing class of people who have the free time, the education and the material resources that are the inevitable products of space-age control of nature by reasonable men.

Today science is a matter of concern to everybody—it is a large and growing part of our national effort. The flowering of science seems suddenly to have burst upon us. But, to be truthful, the progress of science has not been sudden, nor has it very often been made in big jumps. Rather it has come, by and large, in steady and persistent small steps. Events sometimes do dramatize for us, suddenly, the heights to which our steps have brought us. So, with the fourth of October of 1957. On that afternoon Sputnik I made us realize that we were living in the age of man's conquest of space.

I shall never forget that Friday evening! It gives me chills to relive the frenzy of excitement that a man-made earth satellite, launched far away in Russia, would pass over Boulder. The phone became hopelessly jammed with radio and newspaper queries, and with calls from other scientists planning to organize cooperative observations. Janet had just started supper hamburgers, which I never ate. My little boy, Jonny, then six, had to go over to the Observatory with me at seven p.m. because we didn't have time to get a baby-sitter, and Janet had a meeting. Next day Jonny told us with pride that he was the first one in his class to hear Sputnik, real, not just on the radio. Indeed, he was probably

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

one of the first people in the country to hear its radio transmitter "real" or otherwise!

Few events have so dramatically heralded an advance of science-technology. But, of course, the space age really didn't begin that evening, nor did it even have any sharp date of onset. Its origins go back to Robert Goddard in the twenties, and to Hermann Oberth, still earlier. In a kind of poetic way they go back, perhaps, all the way to Jules Verne, or Jonathan Swift, or even to 1650 to Cyrano de Bergerac's wild concept of a flying machine powered by the lift of the morning dew. Certainly it can be traced to the young Russian, Nicholas Kibaltchitch, jailed nearly a century ago in Saint Petersburg for revolutionary activities, who wrote from his cell of a jet-propelled rocket designed for cosmic travel.

The force of science has always, in modern times, been a major factor shaping social and cultural patterns in the more highly developed countries. Back at the time of the Pilgrims Francis Bacon, for example, stated that "knowledge and power are synonymous." Slightly over one hundred years later Benjamin Franklin urged his countrymen to note that:

> the first drudgery for settling new colonies, which confines the attentions of people to mere necessaries, is now pretty well over; and there are many in every province in circumstances that set them at ease, and afford leisure to cultivate the finer arts and improve the common stock of knowledge.

And he went on to exhort them to increase, through scientific activities, their power over matter and multiply the conveniences or pleasures of life.

Franklin's appreciation of the dream of science was shared by many of his Revolutionary associates. The people of America developed cultural patterns that fostered vigorous science and invention, and promoted its prompt exploitation. The Pennsylvania Assembly, for example, long before creation of the National Science Foundation, voted four hundred and fifty pounds to a basic research program, namely, to observe the 1769 transit of Venus. And after it was all over, William Smith, speaking on

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the floor of the Assembly, stated, "It hath done a credit to our Country which would have been cheaply purchased for 20 times the sum."

Appreciation of the importance and impact of science was at the heart of the philosophical thought of the intellectual leaders of Revolutionary times, who did indeed understand the spirit of the Enlightenment. Many of them had faith that they could demonstrate that freedom has a favorable influence on the growth of useful sciences and arts. And many understood and sought to realize David Hume's concept of the "science of man" and had confidence in their ability to govern themselves rationally and with justice.

Subsequent history has seen, here and elsewhere, the steady growth of the influence of science on social organization and thought. As Julian Huxley has been so eloquent to point out, the prime fact of today's world is the rapidly accelerating pace of scientific progress—we are indeed living in a revolution. Within the very lifetimes of some of us have come: (1) the evolution of manned flight; (2) the rise of the automobile from a curiosity that sometimes worked, to the sleek and highly reliable product of a multibillion dollar industry; (3) the development of amazing new tools like automated lathes, computer-programmed manufacturing units controlled by servo systems, continuous-flow food processing equipment, transistor and integrated circuit electronic components, micro-miniaturized information storage that can print the Holy Bible on a 2″ × 2″ slide and retrieve an image of any page in a fraction of a second; (4) the perfection of many aspects of environmental control such as air conditioning, pest management, outdoor nighttime illumination for sports, *et cetera;* (5) the establishment of huge and profitable industries, like television, where a mere thirty years ago there were only experiments and prototypes.

But perhaps even closer to the heart of what science is all about, history has unfolded, for us who live in this revolution, the superb beauty of discovery of the molecular patterns in a crystal, the organization in a single living cell, the functioning of the ruby that generates a laser beam. In our most powerful

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

telescopes we have glimpsed the concept-shaking mysteries of the enigmatic red-shifted quasars. Are these objects the most fantastically brilliant and distant objects in man's ken, dwarfing whole galaxies by their light, which call for revisions of our notions of the origins of the Universe? Or are they much nearer objects, unique in experience in being so red-shifted as to radiate their light in a manner and from a source of previously unsuspected character—which calls for substantial revisions of our ideas of stellar energy generation? Either way, we have before us one of nature's most majestic enigmas. Such is the pace of progress, moreover, that few astronomers doubt that a decade will see the sweeping consequences of its solution, just as few scientists today ridicule our serious search to listen, in the signals of deep space, for intelligible messages from vastly more advanced civilizations than our own.

Before us lie the known riddles, and the even more challenging mysteries still unknown. James B. Conant said it well: "As the beam of the spotlight on the dark stage broadens to show the characters and the settings, the circumference of the circle of darkness grows." It is indeed a time of wonder and of excitement!

But there is another side to the growing power of control over nature afforded us by science and the associated technology. Nearly every advance of science has two faces. One smiles on us and lifts the aspirations of man; the other scowls sternly on all future hopes. For the miracle of the modern automobile there is the rising scourge of car-born air pollution that threatens to choke our Bosnywashes, our giant Boston-N.Y.-Washington megalopoli. The advance of urbanism, made possible by miracles of air conditioning and food transportation, brings us befouled rivers, vanishing privacy and lives of strain and tension. For the miracles that atomic energy has wrought in medicine, industry, power generation, there hangs over us the specter of nuclear war.

For, as Glenn Seaborg has pointed out, "knowledge is born without moral properties. It is man who applies it according to his acquired patterns of behavior . . . Man, not knowledge, is

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the cause of violence." And the power of science magnifies man's ability to achieve utopia or to destroy all that is civilized, or free, or beautiful. The examples are legion, and familiar to all of us.

Molecular biology, for example, offers exciting new prospects and, at the same time, serious moral problems. We can now begin to unfold something of the incredible workings of the purveyors of our genetic heritage; we also sense new hopes for cancer control, defective organ replacement, control of mongolism. But we can also see the shadowy portent of Aldous Huxley's *Brave New World* of man-made, docile, semimorons for labor in semimoronic tasks, or of the replication of Einsteins or von Neumanns of the future, numberlessly and at will—but will it be for good or ill?

In my own field, the atmospheric sciences, we foresee bringing the entire globe under continuous weather observation by the mid-1970's—and at reasonable cost. And we envision, from this, vastly improved forecasting of storms, freezes, droughts, smog episodes—with attendant opportunities to avert disaster. But we can also see lurking in the beyond-knowledge of today an awesome potential weapon of war—the deliberate manipulation of weather for the benefit of the few and the powerful, to the detriment of the enemy, and perhaps of the bystanders as well. If such powers of weather control emerge—and this is not at all certain to be so—imagine the conflicts of purpose and interest even within a single nation, when the rains and the clouds and the clear days are influenced deliberately. Future work may even show us that unwittingly we have already begun affecting weather—with our jet airplane-induced cirrus blankets and our persistent continental hazes of man's making. How many ways we must be wise!

Perhaps the most exciting still-dream-stage prospect involves the burgeoning of computer science. Our nation's largest and probably most rapidly growing industry is education. To my mind the greatest prospect for personalizing the educational process to meet the individual needs of every student lies in the computer field, in related information storage, retrieval, and proc-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

essing developments for education. But I suspect that nowhere in our whole science-based advance is there greater public fear and distrust than over the threat of the loss of human freedom to mechanization and regimentation through "do not spindle, fold or mutilate." But like it or not, there will be giant strides in command and decision making, automated and semiautomated—in war, economics and other walks of life. We will likely know when the first intercontinental missile of World War III comes, should that happen, in a routine computerized check, on millisecond time scale, of the inventory of space debris; and the decision to retaliate, to enter total war, will probably be made on computer-based advice.

But I really want also to talk about something else having to do with the impact of science. I want to make a few observations about the way science is done, at least as I see it. It seems to me relevant to any discussion of the cultural impact of science or of the public understanding of science. Let me list, one after another, some of the salient traits of science and of the people who practice science.

(1) First, science is constantly, systematically and inexorably revisionary. Science, by the rules of the game, is a self-correcting process and one that is self-destroying of its own errors. The rules of the game are essentially the same in every nation. It is the essence of the scientific way that none of the laws of science is sacred, but stands or falls by the degree to which it works, and by the effectiveness with which it simplifies the apparent complexity of what we see in the natural world about us. The examples of this are legion. One can trace, for example, the evolution of the notion of gravitation and of falling bodies through the work of Aristotle, who believed that heavier bodies have stronger force and fall faster—to the more general and illuminating discoveries of Galileo formulated in his early notions of acceleration, that called for light and heavy bodies to fall at the same rate, if irrelevant effects of air are discounted—to the views of Newton, who quantified and developed general laws of motion and of forces acting at a distance—down to Einstein with the magnificently general relativistic laws of falling bodies.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Here is the working of a self-revising science, which progressed over many, many years, steadily improving our ability to describe and to predict, with a minimum of *ad hoc* assumptions, what happens when bodies fall in space or in the atmosphere near the earth. It is characteristic of science that it pushes constantly into new and unfamiliar realms of experience, and that when it does so our older laws often prove inadequate and their predictions fail, requiring revisions. One of the prime joys of a scientist's life is to discover these inadequacies, and to develop the improvements that lead to more general laws.

It is because of this eternally revisionary nature that science is disruptive of the *status quo*. And the accelerating pace of science hasn't made this any easier for society to absorb. Every year, the time from the development of a new basic principle to its working application grows shorter.

(2) A related trait of science is its destruction of idols, destruction of the gods that men live by. Science, being self-revising, has no absolute right or absolute justice. It is not concerned with ultimate truths, but with useful, or simple, or aesthetically beautiful interrelationships among things apparently unconnected.

One example that comes to my mind is the notion in pre-Galilean times of the divinity and the perfection of the sun. This notion, much to the distress of the Church and of Galileo, could not be held on an absolute basis, and when the dogma of perfection of the sun was apparently contradicted by observations of sunspots and the obvious interpretation of those observations, something had to give. Galileo and the Church both suffered. But the new concept was far more useful, and ultimately simpler.

To live comfortably with science it is necessary to live with a dynamically changing system of concepts. It is necessary to live with enough conservatism to resist the easy abandonment of concepts, but enough flexibility to be able, when necessary, to switch rather than fight.

In this same way science forces us—through geology, astronomy, meteorology and physics—to resign ourselves to making poetic or allegorical interpretations of the literal statements of

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

our most respected cultural authorities—as for example the statements about the origin of the earth that are found in the Bible. There are so many examples of this—the genesis, the day the sun stood still, the parting of the Red Sea, and many others.

In the same way, science has a way of weakening old and respected bonds, like the bonds of family in Japanese and Chinese culture, teacher-student relationships when machines begin to teach, or the relationship of the boss and the employee in automated plants. Science tends to destroy witchcraft in Salem and white supremacy in Mississippi.

(3) Not only are the tenets of science constantly subject to challenge and to revision, but its prophets are under challenge too. For example, we have, many of us, observed and enjoyed the stimulating intellectual exchanges between George Gamow with his "big bang theory" and Fred Hoyle with his continuous creation theory of the origin of the universe. To a nonscientist this disagreement, however, can be a source of great distress. How can these two experts disagree on matters of exact science!

And we have seen how the law of conservation of mass had to be modified and become the law of conservation of mass-energy when the relativistic physics of Einstein emerged. But this revision of scientific "laws" often confuses the layman, who has been taught to think that scientific laws are of nature and not the whim of man. He can't understand why scientists should disagree. And I suspect that one of our big jobs is to make understandable to the general public the reasons why and the limits within which the prophets of science can disagree, argue and take sides—and what is meant when a "law" is refined or abandoned.

(4) Further, the findings of science have an embarrassing way of turning out to be relevant to the customs and to the civil laws of men—requiring these customs and laws also to be revised. For example, the growing knowledge of psychology has forced changes in the laws governing insanity and the rules regarding confinement of patients in mental hospitals. The development of tranquilizers and other drug therapy has even affected the customs of business management and the pulling

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

power of the image of the uncompromisingly tough business executive. Likewise our rules of punishment and control for alcoholism, and the use of marijuana, tobacco or LSD, sometimes require changes as a result of new scientific findings about the use of these substances. The advance of medical science can also bring us real embarrassment in these fields, because penal codes are often geared to a system far slower to adapt to change than fits the pace of science.

We are called upon to change even our notions about what is proper or best in the education and the discipline of our children, as we face new findings regarding the nature of intellectual growth, or the tender age of most productive personality development.

(5) Certainly we have seen spectacular changes in the concept of private property and of national borders as we have moved into the space age. For example, at what height above a country is it perfectly all right to fly a satellite without consulting the country it flies over? At what height does it become an invasion to fly an airplane or a balloon? Camera-equipped military or civil satellites do not violate the territory of nations, but U-2 airplanes are quite another matter.

Who needs be consulted, for example, before a single nation tests globe-circling "needles" put into the atmosphere to reflect radio signals? Very strong feelings arose about this matter, just a few years ago, in the International Astronomical Union.

How do we deal with the conflicts between the State of California and the State of Colorado over the water of the Colorado River? Colorado designed its contracts with California in the absence of secure knowledge about the science of hydrology and of river runoff. What are its obligations to live up to its prior contracts, if future science shows that they were based on very bad scientific reasoning and evidence?

Or cloud seeding—whose water has been wrung out of a cloud on the western slope of Colorado's continental divide? Who assures the rancher of the Great Plains that he has not thereby faced a drier summer? Whose air is it that the mainland Chinese contaminate when they test A-bombs? Whose

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

radio quiet is shattered by the generation of artificial Van Allen radiation belts? Whose right is it to fluoridate the water of a major city, or to generate radioiodine in the atmosphere?

(6) Moreover, the pace of technological advance gravely threatens the bountiful and restorative power of nature to resist modification. It takes just so many years for a tin can to rust away or for a sandborn glass beer bottle to go again to sand. Polluted air from gigantic super-cities can spread beyond the borders of whole states and cannot be rapidly enough cleansed by the rains and the winds and the curative breathing of plants. Fouled rivers, harbors, beaches, contaminate our food supplies, spread disease, violate the beauty of the out-of-doors, which the space age gives us ever more leisure to enjoy, could we but find it.

For these reasons many nonscientists would like moratoria placed on science for awhile—but this is almost certainly impossible. What are the alternatives?

(7) Another trait of science that leads to much hostility or misunderstanding by the nonscientist is the fact that science is practiced by a small elite. Worse yet, the scientists who make up this elite are hard for others to understand. They are obscure, if not threatening. These scientists have a special language, verbal and mathematical, all their own. They use common words in unfamiliar ways, and in strangely straitjacketed senses. When they speak about truth they are not speaking about absolute truth. And their language of mathematics is mixed up in ordinary sentences so that it often becomes difficult, abbreviated and abstract for others to understand.

Too, this small scientific elite has cultural patterns discernibly different from those of the rest of society. For example, a good many scientists do their science for fun—while to much of the rest of the world it seems like expensive or almost capricious fun. It looks like fun with other people's money, and lives.

Within this scientific elite uncertainty is a daily actuality, and sometimes scientists don't seem to others to be sufficiently worried by this uncertainty. To the outsider, they often look irresponsible. Their strange and inconstantly-held concepts are to them matters of interest, like the plays of a chess game.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Knocking down sacred principles is a matter of challenge and of satisfaction. They often deny familiar concepts for the sake of argument, without even believing the denial. Their reasons for rejecting concepts are often hard to explain to nonscientists. They seem frivolous, or authoritarian—as witness the great uproar about the almost universal scientific repudiation, a few years ago, of the popularly appealing concepts of Immanuel Velikovsky and his *Worlds in Collision*.

This whole business tends to breed among laymen suspicion and distrust of scientists. It sometimes leads to fears that the scientists are "mad," irresponsible, "Red" or "far-out."

And all of this would be a problem even if it were not also painfully true that scientists, in addition to being members of an intellectual elite, are also people. They have, alas, all of the foibles, jealousies, ambitions and weaknesses of other people.

It is particularly unfortunate that an air of distrust of science and its practitioners occurs just at this juncture in time, when the universality of the language of science—the ability to communicate with each other possessed by scientists of all countries —offers the hope of bridging the deep political abysses between the East and the West.

And it is still worse because if ever in history we needed optimism, we today need the optimism of science. We need it to give us the courage to tackle creatively and forcefully the awesome problems pushed on us by the pace of science-based progress. Think, for example, of the world population explosion that will bring 400 million people in the United States by the year 2000, and that means that half of the Earth's people will be of Oriental race in the not so distant future when world population reaches ten billion.

The problem is still further compounded by the fact that progress—and optimism—are desperately needed in the social sciences. But the social sciences are under even deeper suspicion than the physical sciences, even though they are identical with these in formal construction. Maybe the problem here is that they deal with our pocketbooks. Certainly they are like other aspects of science, revisionary and revolutionary—and this means that in economic, social and behavioral science fields there are big

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

revolutions and revisions ahead. In these fields of science we are much closer to our Dark Ages and the changes may be sweeping. In the sciences that deal with men's interactions, we still have unburned witches to deal with. There are many wrong turns ahead, in these sciences—but it is an essential of science to blunder down some of these wrong turns, to develop and to test wrong hypotheses. That is the way we get ahead. And the social sciences must not be thrown down the drain because of some of the essential blundering that will make real progress possible.

We have somehow to surmount the quaint, almost anachronistic misconception—not only in the general public but often within the ranks of the physical scientists—that the social sciences differ essentially from the physical because here we are dealing with *man*.

(8) The trait that to me seems the most socially important about science, however, is that it is a major source of man's dissatisfaction with the world as it is—it is a wellspring of man's discontent with the *status quo*. The implicit promises of science and technology are the heart of the present rebellion of the underfed and the underclothed. They give a clear achievable prospect of food and comfort for all, if only all the people on earth become sufficiently determined to use science and technology to this end. Moreover, our Telstars and our radios, our color movies and our magazines, give the poor nations a way to know how poor they really are.

Surely fifty years will see the harvest of the major fruits of science and engineering in the underdeveloped regions of the earth, whether we in America like it or not. If we stand in the way of this irresistible impact of science on the developing cultural patterns, we will be destroyed. If we ignore the approaching tides of progress, we may find ourselves a small island isolated in a vast hostile sea.

But above all else, the thing for us to realize about the scientific revolution is simply that *it is here*. We are now deep into the age of science. It cannot be ignored. Jet airplanes circle the globe in hours. Images of wealth or poverty, or of a particular political ideology, flash into millions of homes everywhere, instantly. Weapons systems can eradicate hundreds of millions

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

of lives in minutes, and we have not been the only nation diligently applying technological skills to the problem of how to design and manage such weapons systems.

My voice can be embossed for my great-grandchildren, yet unborn, on thin mylar and ferrous oxide tape. I can listen, as I did a few nights ago, to Sviatoslav Richter's magnificent playing of Moussorgsky's *Pictures at an Exhibition* recorded on the 25th of February 1958 at Sofia, Bulgaria. And in the background of this music I can hear the coughs of men I shall never know, whose language I cannot speak, but who are my brothers listening with me in my living room.

I can strip a tiny fleck of skin from my body, and have it preserved, intact, alive and growing indefinitely in a laboratory test tube, so that a curious inquisitor can examine microscopically the genetic code that makes me most of what I am, even long after I am through being it.

I can place my eye to the viewing screen of a giant telescope and peer into the silent depths of the Virgo Cluster of island universes, noting the soft glow of the one thousand billion suns that generate there the strange life processes of a hundred million planets, where creatures think out their days, forever beyond communication with us.

It is here! This age of science. And with it some of the most compelling ideas of mankind. The magnificent structure of the relativity theory of Einstein, a notion that has stirred the very foundations of our thinking, a creation of beauty that ranks with the greatest of Beethoven. Or the incredible principle of indeterminacy of Heisenberg, with its idea of the unavoidable uncertainty of definite knowledge about particular events in nature. This is a challenging notion that sets limits on the knowable.

Or the thrilling concept of the continuous creation of the universe, with its picture of stars and men coming and going through an infinite span of time—yet living always in a place in space that appears to its inhabitants but a few billion years old.

It is here, this age of science! And with it comes its promise of what the life of man can be, with food for all, with education, with human freedom, with a stable population. With this age of

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

technology comes the realistic expectation that even the added billions can live in harmonious equilibrium with a natural environment of quality, and one that man can appreciate the more because he knows what a rare thing it is in the universe. For man life need not be nasty, brutish, short—but a life rich with peace of mind and rewarding leisure tasks, with comfort and health, and with a language that transcends political ideology.

But to bring to substance this great dream for humanity we must know that this is what we really want and be willing to work to achieve it. To a tragic degree we in the West have drifted, not so much for lack of willingness to pay the price, but for lack of knowing what it is that we have really wanted—aside from factories, and a rise in the standard of living.

In our explosively changing world it is no longer sufficient to live with philosophies or religions simply handed down from an older generation. We must take up a vital, flexible and ever-evolving concern about the nature and purpose of man, and about what constitutes a good life and a good society in the light of today's communications, population growth, races, political systems, weapons. We must exhibit a concern with philosophy that is geared to the chain-reacting growth of science, and that is consonant with the impact of science on man's changing conception of himself and his world.

Rather than simply fight for the preservation of the old things that are good, we must plan creatively also to shape the new. We must commit ourselves to dare to build the world we want, knowing that it is possible if we but demand it—and if we use intelligently all the potent forces of science, the arts and the humanities that are at our disposal.

There will always be dangers. But I hold with Thornton Wilder, who said, "Every good and excellent thing stands moment by moment at the razor edge of danger, and must be fought for." To be what we can be, we must be unafraid to place ourselves, our ways of life, our economic systems, in the microscope of science—and we must have the courage to put to practice the findings that come out, no matter how hard they hit at the patterns of our folkways. To be what we can be, we must first and foremost know what we want to be.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Letter from England

ANTHONY BURGESS

My final activity of 1966 was to appear on a very brief British Independent Television program along with a man of title (a baronet or something) who is president of the British Duodecimal Society. It is always heartening to discover, in a Britain increasingly conformist and genuflectory to the ruling oligarchy, small eccentric pockets of resistance. The British Duodecimal Society wants to abolish 10 (I refer to the number and not the symbol) as the head of the numerical hierarchy and to substitute One Dozen. One Dozen is to be represented as 10, and our existing digraphs for 10 and 11 are to become, respectively, the figures 2 and 3 turned upside down. This means that 3 × 10 will equal three dozen (30), and the useful Arabic zero will be in the service of a more reasonable kind of arithmetic than that traditionally imposed on us by the tyranny of ten (or 2 upside down).

I think I was persuaded to appear on this program because I have been one of the few loud voices raised in opposition to the proposed changeover of our decimal-duodecimal-octal British currency to a purely decimal one. In 1971, we are told, there will be no more pounds, shillings, pence, halfpence, florins, half-crowns, threepenny bits and guineas. There will be a heavy dollar, probably called a New Pound, and cents (or New Pennies) each of a value of 2.4 of our present penny. I've protested against this not because of arteriosclerotic obscurantist xenophobic Little-England conservatism, but because our British system—first learned from Charlemagne but justified pragmatically over many centuries of use—is the most convenient and comprehensive in the world. A decimal coinage can admit of division only by 2, 4, 5, 10, 25 and 50, but our pounds, shillings and pence will yield also to 3, 6, 8, 12, 24 and many other useful divisors. A British pound, true, is not divisible by either 7 or 9, but add one shilling to your pound and you get twenty-one shillings or one guinea, and both 7 and 9 slice into that beautifully. It is proposed that we give all this up and submit to a system that was only adopted (on both sides of the Atlantic) in a revolutionary fit of pseudo-rationalism. What is the point of enthroning 5 as your chief divisor? We are surely past counting on our toes and fingers. Computers, like natural cells, reject 5; their arithmetic is binary. Decimalization is not only mad; it is out of date.

One thing that horrifies me about the dollar is that attempted division by 3 (and surely a dollar has to be split three ways occasionally) produces a recurring decimal, an abstraction. But aren't cents—in any multiple other than the nickel, dime, quarter or fifty-cent piece—themselves abstractions? When a Third Avenue bartender tots up a heavy round of drinks he always seems to have to do it on paper. This, surely, is because he can't visualize, say, 85¢ as real money; it's an element in a calculation, part of an abstract process. No British barmaid or barman ever has to use a pencil and a pad. Five gins at 2s 6d each? Easy. You conceive an image of five

✪ ANTHONY BURGESS begins with this column a series of reports for the SCHOLAR on the contemporary British scene.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

half-crowns (or two-and-sixpenny pieces)—very solid, very tangible. Long experience has taught you that four of those (which the common man calls half-dollars or tosheroons) make ten shillings. Add another one and you have twelve-and-six (12s 6d). Nothing to it.

The British Duodecimal Society, which fights in vain for the enthronement of One Dozen (spelled 10), is naturally appalled at the impending disappearance of the shilling (a duodecimal coin: twelve pence in it, or four threepenny pieces). I have not yet heard complaints from the British Octal Society (if there is one) about the coming liquidation of the half-crown. A crown used to exist as a coin in its own right. Now it's a mere memory, although the term itself is never used whole. Five shillings (which was the value of the crown) is often called a dollar—or, in rhyming slang, an Oxford (Oxford scholar)—and half-a-dollar is, naturally, a synonym for a half-crown. The beauty of this coin lies in the fact that there are exactly eight of them in a pound, and this octal division seems to satisfy a deeply rooted instinct in man. Even Americans call a quarter "two bits," which means there must be eight bits to an American dollar. In Malaya, where they have Straits dollars (nine to the British guinea, so that $1 = 2s 4d), some of the natives insist on dividing the *ringgit* (*satu ringgit* is $1) into eight *kupangs*, and a *kupang* is a coin that doesn't officially exist. Nevertheless, it's more real to many than a ten-cent piece. Wasn't the dollar originally a "piece of eight," and doesn't the dollar sign itself stand for the fracturing of that number?

I'm aware that these very insular and somewhat antiquated worries about the death of British money as Chaucer and Shakespeare and Dickens knew it will conjure no pangs in American souls. Americans, like continental Europeans, have (I am thinking of the fox in Æsop) lost their tails and must be happy to see England too decaudated. But cannot America, which is as devoted to the historic past as only a progressive nation can be, come to see that in a combined decimal, octal and duodecimal money system the commonsensical past and the rational future dance perfectly together, and determine on a reform of the United States coinage that will be, in effect, a forgiving return to the old way of the mother country? Computers, which follow natural cells in their devotion to the binary system, bank their data in eights. There are still sixty minutes in an hour and twice twelve hours in a day. Forget about those mad Frenchmen and come home. And let Britain (perhaps following America's example) also come home.

❧

THE latter part of the old year was a bad time for the threatening of British institutions. The British Broadcasting Corporation announced in very good time that it was presenting over Christmas a daringly new dramatic interpretation of *Alice in Wonderland*. This, it warned, would not be suitable for children. At once, before anybody had seen a synopsis, let alone a preview, the B.B.C. came under attack for tampering with tradition, vandalizing great art, even (somewhat obscurely) corrupting the young. There were even questions asked in Parliament. The coinage could be interfered with, but not *Alice*. The public disquiet and anger represented a topping-up on the shocked reaction to previous, but well-remembered, B.B.C. enormities—a documentary play, for instance, called *Up the Junction*, which dealt frankly with fornication and abortion in London's Dickensian East End. And it happened that, at the time of the announcement about the new *Alice*, a young television playwright had written a horrifying version of *Cinderella*, with Prince Charming strangling poor Cinders: this, although commissioned by the B.B.C., was rejected summarily on submission of the script, but it was vaguely considered to be a straw in the wind of B.B.C. policy.

This advance publicity for *Alice* ensured huge watching figures and even front-page coverage of the private preview as well as the public transmission. When—appropriately, on the feast of the Slaughter of the Innocents—*Alice in Wonderland* was

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

screened, everybody felt very let down. The only shock was in the discovery that so lively, humorous and amiable a book could be given so glum a dramatic rendering. The adapter and producer was Jonathan Miller, a doctor of medicine who has gained a reputation on both sides of the Atlantic as a witty stage satirist, but is now apparently reaching a phase when he isn't quite sure what he wants to be—anthropologist, sociologist, TV man, Victorian specialist, literary critic or (that most deadly of contemporary phenomena) "controversial personality." His thesis in the new *Alice* was that the true fabric of the dream was best presented by de-animalizing and decartomorphizing its characters, so that Wonderland was peopled by recognizable Victorian "types"—smoking-capped dons and bombazined ladies.

There cannot be any doubt that Lewis Carroll's beasts and playing-card animations were meant to point, in good-natured satire, the eccentricities of grown-ups as a child might see them, especially in the ambience of a Victorian Oxford college. To strip off these thin disguises is—brashly and naïvely—to proclaim the obvious and destroy art. Miller assembled a formidable professional cast, including Sir John Gielgud, Sir Michael Redgrave and Peter Sellers, but they had nothing to do except caricature Victorian senility and feeble-mindedness. Had they been allowed to retain their animal superstructures (or, in the case of Peter Sellers, the pasteboard carapace of King of Hearts), that element of caricature would already have been taken care of; they would then have had an opportunity to individualize. Morever, there is something absurd about two old men on the beach reminiscing about being taught by an old tortoise, and the irrelevance of the jokes about reeling, writhing and fainting, in coils becomes embarrassing. And if, at the Mad Hatter's tea party, the Hatter himself is viable in human form, the Dormouse and the March Hare cannot also claim naked anthropomorphism: that way the exquisiteness of the joke is lost.

For his Alice, Miller chose a haughty young girl with a spotty complexion and a voice of inept flatness. The flatness, Miller claimed, was appropriate to a dream. Well, an assumed hypnotic monotone might come off, but that is a different thing from innate vocal dullness. And, anyway, the implied speech-tones of Alice's lines in the book itself suggest liveliness, sharpness of mind, bubbling bewilderment, humor, the delectable bossiness of a young and charming girl. The Millerian Alice had nothing to do with Carroll, nor, for that matter, did a lot of the dialogue, which Miller evidently wrote himself. A whole stanza of "You Are Old, Father William" was (I think inadvertently) left out, but the total indifference to Carroll's verses was symptomatic. The remarkable climax of the trial scene, where Alice cries "You're nothing but a pack of cards" and finds all the personages swooping about her in sudden flat pasteboard, was changed to a dissolution brought about by the Queen's shouting "Off with her head," which she had shouted often enough before with no very terrible result.

I will say no more about this admittedly clever but wholly misguided perversion of a profound and funny book, except to express regret that the simple-mindedness of today's British young should be exalted into a hitherto unknown clear-headedness. Why, they are all bold enough and clever enough to show the reality underlying complex works of art. Let us now take Jerome K. Jerome's *Three Men in a Boat* and weed all the laughs out of it. It is not seemly to laugh, except very bitterly, in the age of Vietnam and universal famine. Besides, that Victorian age was the nightmare workshop of all our present horrors, and it is unfair that the dwellers in it, who found it a kind of paradise, should be allowed to rest in peace. Drag up Alice and make her, with the aid of techniques learned from the films of Cocteau and Robbe-Grillet, learn what a *cauchemar* her summer's day dream really was. Take J., George and Harris and make them see what their trip down the Thames really is—an attempted escape into history which rises from its tombs and documents and bites them with bubonic plague. Three

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

men alone together? They must be homosexual. They enjoy their food? Let the cameras range creepily over heaps of beef and veal-and-ham pie and apple turnovers and then zoom on to the writhing maggots. Let their dog Montmorency be messily run over by a hansom cab. Hold that shot of the mangled limbs, let the dying screams serve for postludial music, then roll your credits.

These Victorian writers, however frothy and escapist the books they produced, knew at least as much about their own age as we do. Similarly, Shakespeare could contrive the highly wrought filigree of utopian pastoralism while the bears Harry Hunks and Sackerson tore dogs apart alive in Paris Garden, and men and women died of plague, and traitors were shown their smoking entrails *in extremis* at Tyburn. There is a new puritanism about in Britain which is highly suspicious of simple gaiety. The stage must proclaim the Theater of Fact, and fact must be shameful and devastating—limbless children in Vietnam, dogs lapping watery excrement among Calcutta's starving. Well, one might go some way toward denouncing a frivolous dismissal of today's ghastliness in the art of today, but to mangle the art of the past in petulant vindictiveness is quite another matter. For the true motive behind Jonathan Miller's interpretation of *Alice* was to deprive a child of her dream, to show her Victorian life as the twentieth century sees it. This goes further, perhaps, than mere slaughter of the innocents. For Alice was dragged from the grave as a zombie (she sounded like one) and made to participate in a sophisticated feast that gave off cachou-whiffs of corruption.

❧

I MENTIONED a new puritanism in Britain. This may seem to accord ill with miniskirts and swinging London, wherever that is. But—despite the dope-jags and the free-for-all sex—the puritanism is undoubtedly there; indeed, it is probably nastier than the old Massachusetts Brownism or Cromwellian theocracy, since it frequently masquerades as permissiveness. A middle-aged man has just been sent to trial for indecent assault because, when a couple of miniskirted teenagers visited his home, he put his hands on their knees. His gesture seems to me a reasonable one: if you see something you like the look of, your instinct is to touch it. But the girls cried aloud their puritanical horror, and now this man is up on a major charge. Sometimes, when I travel on the London Underground, I am faced on the seats opposite by a phalanx of silk thighs that cannot be accorded the static tribute of pure aesthetic appreciation. I am moved, I am excited, yet I must keep my face stony. An involuntary leer of admiration would bring all the well-oiled apparatus of the law into action, or at least a bloody nose from a boy-friend. The seventeenth-century Brownists and Cromwellians led nobody into temptation, but nowadays, in lubricious London, a delectable ice-topping covers a sad cake of dead-sea fruit and purgative bran.

The young seem to have all the sex they need, but sleeping together has an aura of duty about it (stern daughter of the voice of God): little joy and, I should imagine, little skill. In any television play the first kiss has to be followed at once by the first postcoital languor. It is a terrible thing to be square and chaste and thus fall into the hands of the living God. If there were more passion I should not be so (and this sounds, I know, puritanical enough) censorious, but there is too much of the fulfilling of cold rituals, the practice of a religion without love in it. Even the gestures of protest, which admit a ghost of passion, are generated collectively: it was once the Bomb, now it is the Vietnam war. There is little evidence of the thrust of the individual will; there is a terrible fear of nonconformism.

It is appropriate that the stink of puritanism should cling to everything; after all, we have a government that is closer to stern Oliver than to the dissolute Stuarts. Freedom of conscience is frowned on; let every human act find appropriate legislation. If we smoke cigarettes we will

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

kill ourselves; therefore increase the number of no-smoking railway carriages, ban television cigarette commercials, consider a total prohibition of smoking in public places. It is bad that British citizens should seek the sun in foreign parts, therefore reduce their hard-currency allowance. Make the price of whisky exorbitant. Let us brace ourselves for the economic struggle and let us hope—since the British spirit thrives on stringencies—that this struggle will last a long time. Then further wholesome curbs on free will may be introduced. It will be in the interests then of the puritan economy that miniskirts should be shorter still, saving material. And if we are intolerably tempted, there is always the cold water of the law to be poured on our rising passions. England swings. Indeed, and on a British-made gallows.

Status

ROBERT LESLIE CONLY

Not by the broken-fendered car I drive
(By neighbors not completely understood
Who wish I'd move it from the neighborhood)
Nor by the poetry I write, nor yet
The richness of the fur around your neck.
But by the sum of love that I can feel
Not just for you but for the pelicans
That whistle past my window on their way
To see what's up a half mile down the beach
And by the want of wariness I see
In any eyes that come this close to me.

✪ ROBERT LESLIE CONLY has been a writer and editor on the staff of *Newsweek*, *Pathfinder*, and, since 1951, the *National Geographic*. He has contributed articles, essays, short stories and verse to many periodicals.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

INTERVIEW

W. H. Auden

POLLY PLATT

"Come in, come in, we've already started tea, do you mind?"

W. H. Auden stood in the dim entranceway of the Austrian peasant's cottage he recently immortalized in *About the House,* his bulky figure stooped, his stance welcoming. His smile, what you could see of it, was uncertain, for you were late: the approach to the poet hailed as the modern Goethe had been an odyssey through archaic allegory. The long road from Vienna had detoured through sugar beets and dead-ended in a circle without outlet around an onion-steepled church. The heroic cycle of hope, frustration and despair had closed with the revival of hope at the discovery of cart tracks to the poet's threshold. You had arrived. But where? Through a slat gate, up a slippery apple orchard, past a manure pit and a bed of zinnias and cabbages, you had found the house, yellow clay, one story, not old but built to last forever, and had pulled the iron bell handle; waiting for the door to open, watching the cars far below on the Autobahn slashing across the quiet fields, you understood that you were in Arcadia after the Fall, and that you were twenty minutes late.

"I'm afraid you've come on a bad day for a talk," the poet said. "The Sunday papers have just come in from London and we're in the midst of the crosswords."

As he spoke, in a British English unaltered by twenty-five years' residence in America, his face emerged in the half-light. Deep lines cut into the flesh like gashes, across the forehead, down the cheekbones, under the eyes, over the chin, arresting, almost frightening, as were the eyes, so close together by the large nose they seemed as powerful as three. It was the ravaged face of the surviving hero, tormented but undefeated, with thick sandy hair and full lips decorating it preposterously in a devil's joke which the poet himself echoed with the careless incongruity of his dress. He was clothed in ill-fitting gray flannels held up by suspenders, a blue shirt buttoned to the throat without a tie, and plaid slippers with the soles peeling off in slivers.

What did you say to Goethe in suspenders? But what did you expect? A tunic? A toga?

He led the way into a deep-windowed den, bright with gayly painted peasant wardrobes and orange and white checked curtains, and crammed with the implements of pleasures anticipated or just enjoyed. Stacks of books, records, tapes, newspapers, bottles and overflowing ashtrays covered most of the available surfaces, including the floor. Blue and white laundry hung on a wooden rack around the blue clay peasant stove, Richard Strauss and Stravinsky stared down from drawings on the walls, wheel-like iron chandeliers hung from the ceiling. It was the space described in *About the House* by the poem called "The Common Life," dedicated to Chester Kallman, the American librettist who collaborated with Mr. Auden on his libretto for Stravinsky's *The Rake's Progress:*

✪ POLLY PLATT, a free-lance writer, lives in Vienna with her husband, Alexander Grchich, Austrian diplomat with UNESCO, and their five children. Miss Platt worked for several years as a feature writer for the Philadelphia *Evening Bulletin* and later as a reporter for the New York *Post.* She has lived abroad since 1954.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

A living room, the catholic area you
(Thou, rather) and I may enter
without knocking, leave without a bow, confronts each visitor with a style,

a secular faith: he compares its dogmas
with his, and decides whether
he would like to see more of us. (Spotless rooms
where nothing's left lying about

chill me, so do cups used for ashtrays or
smeared with lipstick: the homes I warm to,
though seldom wealthy, always convey a feeling
of bills being promptly settled

with checks that don't bounce.) . . .*

The poet backed into a corner seat behind one of the two tables in the room, this one a card table laid with three blue and white cups and saucers, and a dish of chocolate biscuits in the midst of four butt-filled ashtrays. Presently Chester Kallman appeared with a matching teapot and the London *Times,* and sat down. A plumpish, slightly balding man in his late forties with a round smooth face, he wore an open shirt, slacks and brown leather thongs.

Mr. Auden poured tea.

"Poetry is the only art people haven't learned yet how to consume," he said, "like soup. They hang copies of great paintings, they pipe music, and as for novels . . ."

"They abridge them," said Mr. Kallman, already bent over his crossword puzzle.

"You can't do that to poetry," said Mr. Auden. "You have to read it. There will always be people who like it, just as there always have been. It is in a better position now. Just as before the camera, painting had to record many things having nothing to do with art, so before printing, poetry was the normal thing to write for recording because verse is easier to remember. Now, poetry is freed from many things which were rather a burden."

What should poetry do?

Mr. Auden offered the chocolate biscuits around and lit a cigarette. Elbows on the table, he held it in front of his mouth as he talked so that his face was a smoky mask.

He said: "We are born in sin and it is very difficult to behave well. Human history is a sorry record, criminal and pathological. But life is as it is: difficult, but not impossible. You have to try to live as decently as you can, and not despair. One likes to think that poetry can help in certain ways . . . Some people write irresponsibly about despair. If they really gave up, they would commit suicide."

"Or eat too much," said Mr. Kallman, without looking up.

"We all owe a great deal to Eliot," said Mr. Auden, "both as a poet and as a person. The way he behaved was an example for all of us. His work was so idiosyncratic and extremely original that as a poet you couldn't learn much from him except by imitating him. You could learn more from Rilke and Yeats. Yeats, as a politically interested poet, had the great advantage of living in a country where everything took place on a scale small enough to be totally comprehended. You can't write about anything unless you know all about it; and, of course, unless you have a personal interest in it. I was very much influenced by Horace."

He sipped his tea. "Rewriting is what I've been doing recently. Also, translating the Russian poet Voznesensky. The question of preserving the Russian rhythms and rhymes is *frightfully* difficult." He closed his eyes and the gashes across his brow deepened. "I've just been *staring* at it. Revision of one's own work is, of course, much easier.

"I've just finished revising a volume of poems written between '27 and '57, and am going to London with it now under my arm, like a great baby. Rewriting can be exasperating, when you see how clumsy you've been, but there is not the agony of starting a new work—which must be an absolutely new step, like a child learning to walk, consistent with one's direction but also untried, different . . ."

The poet, now sixty, leaned back and smiled. "This is one of the good things

* © Copyright 1963 by W. H. Auden. Reprinted from *About the House,* by W. H. Auden, by permission of Random House, Inc.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

about getting older. You begin to know your craft better. You know how to push yourself further, and in which direction. I wouldn't be twenty again for anything. There were so many things one couldn't handle, so many things one didn't know. Who one was, for instance. This is a great help, to know who you are. Actually, I haven't found any disadvantages in getting older. I enjoy myself very much."

Then he talked faster. As he gained momentum he had a way of crowding several words into one and stretching out one very long.

"It is my private belief that artists don't die before they have done the work they can do, are meant to do. Even with Mozart you feel, what *more* could he do . . . The only exception is Keats. He was two people, wasn't he, the person who wrote the poetry and the person who wrote the letters? If he had kept on, perhaps the two people would have come together, and you would have had something really extraordinary. But the others . . . I feel it strongly, they die when they have done what they can. Look at Proust, who kept going until the last page, then died." He slowed down, and shrugged. "Oh, perhaps it is pure superstition, absolute nonsense. When they die, they die, and can't do any more. The reverse is certainly not true. They go on living for years after they have said all they have to say."

He rose and edged his way out from behind the table. "Would you like to see the house? I'll show you the kitchen first. Chester is a marvelous cook."

"I'm an eclectic," said Mr. Kallman, glancing up from his crossword with a gesture toward the cookbooks sharing the floor with dictionaries and encyclopedias.

"I got the idea of writing a cycle of poems about the spaces in a house by actually owning one," said Mr. Auden, shuffling slightly as he moved across the floor. "An apartment is completely different, like a nomad's tent. I adore mine in New York—the only unprovincial town in the world, by the way—on Eighth Street near First Avenue, best place in town for getting a cab, wonderful little food shops nearby, but the roof leaks and you never know when you'll be thrown out. I bought this place in '57 and spend about half the year here, and the winter half in New York. For the summer I wanted to be in a wine-drinking country and near an opera house."

The cycle's "palace kitchen for kingdoms where royalty would be incognito," a large L-shaped space at the center of the house, was a jet-age gourmet's lair; uncapped spices, half-empty vintage wine bottles and greasy frying pans embellished the tops of smooth white appliances for cooking, grilling, washing and storing.

The poet smiled with the memory of last night's dinner, declined to describe it, and opened the door to the guest room. This space that he had called the "shrine to friendship" held two simple iron beds, two windows to the woods outside and in the corner a crucifix. A great orange cat was curled up on the floor.

"That's Rhadames," he said. "He came from New York. We always name cats after opera characters. To get to my workroom we must go out and around."

His "Cave of Making," where "silence is turned into objects," a small dormer room reached by an outside staircase, was rugless and unfurnished except for neat piles of books and a desk on a raised platform by the window. It was dark now; you couldn't see the zinnias and cabbages, only the distant lights of the cars flashing by on the Autobahn.

"I get up early and sit over my coffee, then come up here and work until eleven," Mr. Auden said. "Then I go shopping until lunchtime. After lunch I attend to letters, then work again between teatime and cocktailtime. In the evenings I generally read, or go into Vienna to the opera. I just finished reading a book about Franz Jägerstätter, an Austrian non-Nazi beheaded for not voting for the Anschluss. People tend to think martyrdom is useless; it clearly is not."

Back in the living room Mr. Kallman was still at his crossword. Mr. Auden resumed his place on the corner seat and

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

listed the historic surroundings of his property. A castle down the road had been burned by the Turks, Napoleon's troops had marched past the church, bronze age articles had been found nearby.

"The Carolingian Empire stopped at the next town," he said. "I like being in a German-speaking country. German is a marvelous language. It requires being spoken by an educated tongue—any concierge can speak excellent French—and it is good for popular songs because even the simplest things said in it appear to have great weight.

"One of the great things about English for writing poetry is that it is a mongrel language with such a rich vocabulary, words from the German, Scandinavian, Anglo-Saxon, French. Because of the dropped inflections you can make nouns verbs and verbs nouns. And it is probably an advantage that rhymes are hard to find, a trap for the sort of person who uses banal rhymes. While in Italian it is difficult, even when writing prose, to avoid rhymes, in English it is at once revealed if a person uses a word because he must, in order to get the rhyme. Of course it is maddening that the third person singular demands an 's' on the verb and the plural of nouns takes an 's' . . . Let me try and show you what I mean . . ."

He gazed out the window a moment. "Take sheep," he began.

"Sheep is the worst possible example," said Mr. Kallman.

"Well . . . the lion leaps but the lions leap," said Mr. Auden. "Let's just say that in the English indicative rhyming is particularly difficult. I enjoy rhymes, almost any rhymes." He put his head back and closed his eyes, then recited: " 'Dies in the singular/Common we define/But its plural cases/Are always mascu-line.' " He spread his hands out and smiled. "We used to say that in school. I'm sorry, I know I'm hard to understand—that limey accent—"

"Not limey accent, just mumbling," said Mr. Kallman.

"But then I can't understand Americans sometimes either," said Mr. Auden. "A Southern lady seemed to be talking to me once about her bowels—quite confusing until it turned out she was discussing debutante balls. One thing I enjoy particularly about America is not being able to place people socially the moment they open their mouths, as you can in England. There are so many right and wrong ways to speak there, it changes with the community, just as the definition of the right side of the tracks is quite different in Vermont from that in Virginia. A great book could be written on this. Very complicated, though."

The poet rose to draw the curtains, then sat down again.

"Expatriate? I don't know what the word means," he said. "I more or less left the Midlands, where I was born, at seven, when I went to boarding school. I left England because there the cultural family is so small. While I love my cultural cousins and aunts very much, while I adore the cooking and climate, it is rather small for living in all the time. In the old days there was the Empire to explore. Now, one goes to America.

"American cultural life is definitely not a family life. You are on your own, and this teaches you to work. To work means to take the trouble to do your job properly. I think the English are very intelligent, but I find them lazy. Perhaps they are exhausted from their accomplishments of the nineteenth century."

Although he has lectured in most American states, has taught literary history in various American colleges, including Swarthmore and Smith, and has been a United States citizen since 1946, Mr. Auden hesitated to discuss the differences between America and Europe.

"Very hard to pin down," he said. "One great difference is nature. You can't talk about Mother Nature in America, the climate is too violent. People haven't lived there long enough to give one the feeling of a humanized landscape.

"Then there is the attitude to money. In Europe, having money means doing as you like. You want to have as much as you can and the others should have as

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

little as possible. In America, money is symbolic, a sign, for one thing, of manhood. It is every European's dream to be a *rentier,* to inherit enough to do as he pleases. But the American *rentier* goes out and works even harder than before, or takes to drink, or visits a psychiatrist.

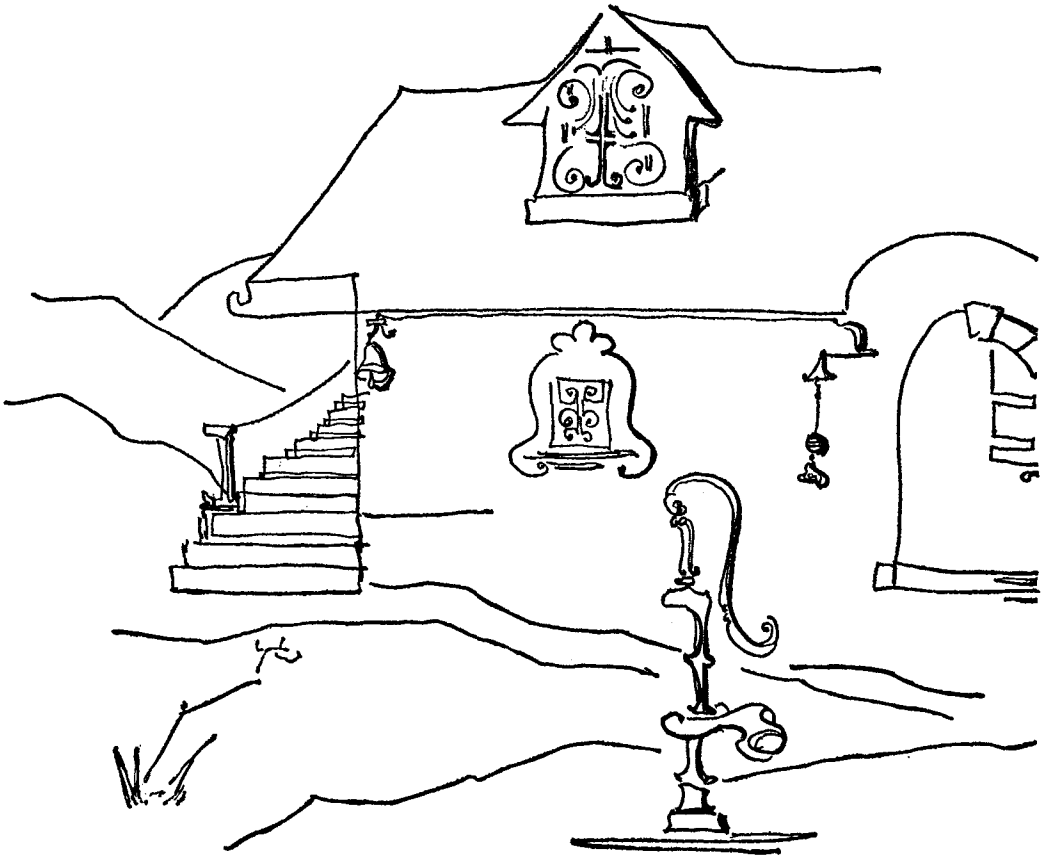
"I find Americans marvelous. Perhaps a bit anxious about being popular, a bit worried about their status, but admirable in many ways, particularly in how they get on together."

What would his next book be?

"I never give away my vices or discuss the future," he said with a smile.

He gazed out the dark window toward the fields where, that afternoon, women in long skirts and white bandannas had been bent over sugar beets. Rhadames rubbed against his leg as he took a long drag on his cigarette.

"I am superstitious," he said then, disappearing behind the smoke. "I never talk of what I am doing before it is done."



SKETCH BY SANDAY OF MR. AUDEN'S HOUSE AT KIRCHSTETTEN, AUSTRIA

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

CONtroversy

The Assassins

JOHN KAPLAN

The present furor over the assassination of President Kennedy and the work of the Warren Commission can best be understood as part of a four-stage controversy —of which we are now just entering the fourth stage. First, in 1964, just a few months after the assassination, Thomas G. Buchanan *(Who Killed Kennedy?)* and Joachim Joesten *(Oswald: Assassin or Fall Guy?)* put forth quite different theories which agreed that the President had been slain by a right-wing conspiracy. Although both books enjoyed large sales outside the United States—and to some extent in it—within the perspective of only three years they are so inept that it is embarrassing to read them over. Second came the Warren Commission *Report,* followed shortly by its twenty-six volumes of documentation. Inside the United States and to a markedly smaller extent outside it, the work of the Warren Commission and the lavish, indeed uncritical, praise of it quieted most doubts. Then about nine months ago as we reached the third stage, a second generation of unofficial inquiries into the assassination began appearing. These, although they differ enormously from each other, have had a single impact on the public mind and have at least to a substantial segment of the American people cast great doubt not only upon the Commission's conclusions but on the ability and integrity of the Commissioners themselves. Finally and only in the past few months, we have begun to hear not only more and more evidence to throw the Commission's conclusions into question but also, for the first time, demands for action from those who have the power to compel action.

To understand how this has happened we must look carefully at stage three, the stage at which the first serious and specific criticisms of the Commission appeared. This stage consists essentially of five books: *Inquest,* by Edward J. Epstein; *Rush to Judgment,* by Mark Lane; *Whitewash,* by Harold Weisberg; *The Oswald Affair,* by Leo Sauvage; and *The Second Oswald,* by Richard H. Popkin. Although these books differ greatly in detail and in theses from one another, all share two characteristics. First, they rely primarily on the Warren Commission's own testimony and exhibits; and second, they agree that the Warren Commission, in evaluating even its own evidence, did at very best an incompetent job, and at worst, something that can only darkly be hinted at.

We must therefore draw a sharp distinction between the *Report* of the Warren Commission and its twenty-six volumes of supporting evidence. Although the *Report* itself comes under criticism on almost every conceivable ground, most of the ammunition for this attack is contained in the evidence that the Commission itself published. It has only rarely been argued that the stenographers did not take down what the witnesses really said, that the physical exhibits were altered, or that the expert witnesses lied. And, equally significant, no one has come up with any witnesses of importance whose statements were not before the Commission either through testimony or through interview reports. This is not to say that the authors of the third stage afford equal credence to the testimony that the Commission accepted, or view the weight of the evidence as did the Commission. Quite

✪ JOHN KAPLAN is a professor of law at Stanford University. This is his first appearance in the SCHOLAR.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the contrary. In each of the books, there is a rejection of those witnesses whom the Commission apparently believed, an acceptance of those whom the Commission discounted and the drawing of entirely different conclusions from the same evidence.

Nor is it merely whim that made each of these books accept witnesses and theories that the Commission had rejected. Each author argues essentially that his account is unbiased and therefore completely rational and that the Commission was more interested in "political truth" than in the actual facts of the assassination. The theory is that the most politically settling thing the country could hear was that a lone assassin, unconnected with any power group and completely without political motive, had committed a hopelessly irrational act and had then died at the hands of someone equally irrational. Since that was so, it is argued that no great dishonesty need be imputed to the Commission, but rather only a subconscious straining to find what it wished to find. Indeed, this theme is repeated so often throughout these books that one almost accepts it as an obvious truth. When one thinks about it, however, it is hard to visualize a set of facts about the assassination which if published would afford no consolation to at least one of two such polar men as Earl Warren and J. Edgar Hoover.

Moreover, although it sounds much nicer to say that the Commission need only have acted out its subconscious desires in order to have made the gross errors it is accused of, one would have to distort the facts alleged in all of the books to argue that this would be a possibility. For their main thesis to have any validity at all, all of the books —with the possible exception of Epstein's— must imply that many people, including the Commissioners themselves, had deliberately lied, suppressed evidence, and concealed the truth.

There are, of course, certain problems with the conspiracy-to-suppress-the-truth theory. The fact is that the Commission did relatively little of the work of collecting and analyzing the facts. In common with many other governmental commissions, the Warren Commission was chosen for its balance and reputation for integrity, but even if both of these were in fact a sham, the charges of fraud would be meaningless unless the same were true of the staff —composed primarily of young honor graduates of the nation's leading law schools.

The argument that the Commission subconsciously suppressed the truth has, aside from the flat allegation of motive, two main prongs. The first is that the Commission got off on the wrong track by regarding Lee Harvey Oswald from the beginning of the hearings as the principal—and indeed the only—suspect. Before one can appreciate the justice of this complaint, one should consider the physical evidence that greeted the staff members of the Commission when they began their work. First, the President was killed by a series of shots, at least two of which, from the wounds they caused and the marks on his limousine, appeared to have been fired from above and from the rear, the general location of the upper storeys of the Texas School Book Depository. Secondly, in this Depository a rifle was found that not only contained on it a palm print of Lee Harvey Oswald, an employee of the Depository, but that was traced by handwriting analysis as having been purchased by Oswald under an assumed name several months before. Moreover, a bullet in almost perfect condition (the famous "Exhibit 399") was recovered from the stretcher of Governor Connally, another occupant of the car, shortly after the shootings, and was identified positively as having come from Oswald's rifle; and of the fragments of a bullet (which were recovered from the Presidential limousine), two were conclusively identified as having come from Oswald's rifle while the rest— although not conclusively identified—were consistent with this origin. Even if this were the only evidence against Oswald, it would certainly justify a jury verdict against him. Cases have turned on physical evidence no better than this—for instance, the identification of a typewriter rather than a gun transmuted the testimony of a Whittaker Chambers into a case strong enough to convict Alger Hiss, a far more attractive defendant than Lee Oswald.

But the fact that Oswald's rifle was used

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in the killing is not the only physical evidence connecting Oswald with the crime. His subsequent behavior would be hard to explain to a jury on any other theory. Within forty-five minutes of the killing of the President, a Dallas patrolman, J. D. Tippit, was shot to death, and a few minutes thereafter Lee Oswald was arrested in a moving picture theater nearby. A revolver was found on his person, and, while the barrel was too large to allow conclusive identification of the bullets that killed Tippit, several shells were found at the site of the Tippit killing that were unambiguously identified as having come from this gun. One need not assert that these facts prove Oswald's guilt beyond any possible doubt, or even—as is indisputably true—that any prosecutor having such a hard core of evidence would sleep quite comfortably before the trial. Actually, all that need be said is that this evidence gave the Commission a likely and proper starting point. An investigative body, like a human mind, cannot collect facts endlessly without a working hypothesis to give direction to the investigation and to separate that which is relevant from that which is not. This was far from improper; indeed it would seem that the Commission used the most rational method of inquiry by starting with a working hypothesis that Oswald had a hand in the killing and attempting from there to find out, first, whether this was so; second, whether, if so, there was anyone who aided or conspired with him; and third, whether Jack Ruby had any connection with Oswald or the assassination.

The second prong of the argument, that the truth was unintentionally suppressed by the Commission, is much more complicated. This argument is that the Commission should have treated the inquiry as at least in part a trial of Lee Oswald and afforded him the benefits of the adversary system by appointing a lawyer to cross-examine witnesses and protect his interests. (The Commission did appoint a lawyer to "represent" Oswald but neither this attorney—the then President of the American Bar Association—nor the Commission took the appointment in any way seriously.) It is argued that not only was this unfair to Oswald, but it contributed to the alleged unreliability of the Commission's conclusions. It should be clear, however, that although a criminal trial of Lee Oswald might have been the best method of determining Oswald's guilt, it would have been one of the worst methods of deciding whether Oswald, if guilty, had been part of a conspiracy. For a host of reasons, evidence bearing on the question of a conspiracy would have been ruled inadmissible in such a prosecution, even if the parties felt that they were tactically better off by producing it. Furthermore, it is really quite unlikely that either side would have tried. Oswald certainly would not have made his case better by showing that there was or was not a conspiracy, and while the government perhaps might have been marginally benefited by showing there was a conspiracy if it had had such evidence, the chances of confusing the jury and leading them away from the basic issue—Oswald's guilt —might very well have made such a course inadvisable to any confident prosecutor.

The lack of counsel for Oswald on the issue of his own guilt is another point entirely. Here, I part company with the Commission and think that a competent, honest and dedicated staff working solely to show that Oswald was innocent would have improved the reliability of the Commission's determination. On the other hand, it was hardly outrageous of the Commission to place the burden both of looking for exculpatory evidence and of cross-examining witnesses on its whole staff—which did in fact reveal the unreliability of a great deal of evidence that might otherwise have been adduced against Oswald. Had Oswald been alive, he, presumably knowing the facts, would have been most competent to advise his counsel how to proceed. But since Oswald was dead by the time the Commission was called into being, his lawyer would have been put in the position of the famous advocate who is reputed to have defended a rape case by arguing first that the man never did it, and second that the girl consented. The facts brought before the Warren Commission might support arguments, albeit very weak ones, that Oswald did not commit the crime, for, say, eight mutually

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

exclusive reasons. Presumably, only Oswald would have known whether any of these reasons was the true one—and hence probably the one most likely of success—but any counsel who had tried seriously to put forth all of the inconsistent defenses would only have succeeded in burying any valid ones beneath many that turned out to be spurious. Moreover, any lawyer for Oswald would, after the fact, have been open to the charge, "Why didn't you show thus and so?" The answer, of course, might have been "Because if I did, my witness could have been destroyed completely," or "thus and so was obviously not true." These perhaps might be good answers, but coming from the Commission's defenders they would not prove sufficient and it is unlikely that they would prove more so if they came from any "defense" lawyer. The fact is that the death of Oswald made the work of the Commission vastly more difficult. If Oswald had been alive his failure to point out any possible theories of innocence would be taken as an admission that there were no valid ones and his refusal to testify or provide any evidence—the highly artificial command of the Fifth Amendment notwithstanding—would be taken as an effort to cover up guilt. With Oswald dead, however, the Commission was left to refute every possible argument that Oswald might have made—an almost endless task.

Although the five books of the third stage rely in part on general criticisms of the Commission to make plausible their different weighing of the facts, it is on their discussions of specific items of evidence that they must stand or fall.

Epstein's book, for this reason, is the best with which to begin. Its exposition of the facts is the shortest; it is the clearest and least polemical; finally, it hits at what is probably the most difficult to justify of the Commission's major conclusions. Epstein does not deny that Oswald took part in the assassination of President Kennedy. The thrust of his work is that the Commission, in concluding that there was no reason to believe that Oswald had had assistance, had accepted a hypothesis that on its own evidence was a most unlikely one and rejected persuasive evidence that Oswald must have had aid in firing at President Kennedy.

Although the evidence against Oswald was ample, the Commission was, of course, most interested in determining whether he was acting in concert with others. While this task was central to the Commission's role, a little thought reveals just how difficult was the problem that the Commission faced. If the Commission could find enough evidence of a conspiracy, it could then prove—or at least assert with confidence—that one existed. On the other hand, if it could find no evidence of one, what did that prove? How could one ever prove that Oswald had not been part of a conspiracy? It was always possible that somebody had telephoned the night before and encouraged him; someone might have been waiting farther along the President's route prepared to fire if Oswald missed; and it is even possible that Oswald fired after—or even at the same time as—another attempt, which failed so completely that it did not even cause a disturbance. Certainly, the failure of the Commission to find evidence of any of these things was only very weak proof that they did not happen. Indeed, the nature of the situation was such that a reasonable possibility that Oswald had had help would have to remain, regardless of how careful and competent was the investigation, which found no evidence of a conspiracy.

On the other hand, one thing the Commission might be able to do was to prove whether it was possible for Oswald to have fired the shots himself. For this reason it became imperative to examine more closely the sequence of shots that struck the President and Governor Connally. In this task, the Commission was aided enormously by moving picture photographs taken by a clothing manufacturer named Abraham Zapruder. In determining the timing of the fatal volley the Commission began with the likelihood—not disputed by Epstein—that there were three shots. The Commission reasoned that, inasmuch as Oswald's view of the President would have been blocked between Frames 166 and 210 on Zapruder's film by the foliage from a large tree, the first shot must have been fired either before Frame 166 or after Frame 210. The elimi-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

nation of the period before Frame 166 was fairly simple. If the President had been shot from Oswald's vantage before Frame 166, his entrance wound would have been in the front rather than the rear. Moreover, the President reacted to the wound around Frame 225, and his reaction time would have been inordinately slow—over three seconds—had he been struck at Frame 166. The photographs not only fixed the President's first wound at somewhere between Frames 210 and 225 (because Zapruder's view was blocked briefly by a sign, the President disappeared from the film at Frame 205 and did not reappear until Frame 225—at which time he seemed to have been hit), they also showed that by Frame 235 Governor Connally had also been hit and that at Frame 313 the fatal bullet struck the President's head.

While one might, at first, think that the first shot hit the President in the neck, the second hit Governor Connally, and the third struck the President's head, another fact made this reconstruction impossible. It was demonstrated that Oswald's rifle could not physically be reloaded and fired in less than 2.3 seconds, or, in terms of Zapruder's film speed of 18.3 frames per second, 42 frames. As a result, even if the President had been hit at Frame 210—the earliest point at which Oswald had had a clear shot—it would have been impossible for another bullet from Oswald's gun to have hit Governor Connally at Frame 235. The Commission therefore adopted what has since become known as the "one-bullet" theory and concluded that the same bullet first passed through the President's neck and then struck Governor Connally. Moreover, since one bullet was fragmented when it struck the President's head and there was no sign of any other bullet mark on the limousine, the Commission concluded that one of the shots (most likely the second) must have missed the Presidential car completely. With these two bullets therefore accounted for, Exhibit 399 (the bullet found on Governor Connally's stretcher) had to be the "one bullet" that had struck both President Kennedy and Governor Connally. To reach this conclusion, the Commission had to answer three major questions: first, is the one-bullet theory refuted by Governor Connally's testimony that he heard the first shot and had time to turn around before being hit by what he was certain must have been the second shot; secondly, could one bullet have inflicted the wound on President Kennedy's neck and the wounds found on Governor Connally—in his rib cage(front and back), his wrist and his thigh; and finally, if one bullet could have done all this damage, could it have remained in the almost perfect condition of Exhibit 399?

The Commission felt that it had satisfactorily answered each of these questions. Governor Connally's testimony could be explained by the fact that often there is a perceptible lag (here the lag would have had to be on the order of one-half of a second) between the time one is struck by a bullet and the time one realizes this. And although the photographic evidence did not show any obvious reaction by the Governor immediately after he was presumably hit, this too could be explained by a delayed reaction. As to the other two questions, the Commission felt that the physical evidence and the expert testimony before it fully supported its conclusion.

It is in this context that Epstein's argument can be understood. First, he argues that unless the Commission's one-bullet theory was correct, there would have to have been another assassin, since Oswald himself clearly could not have fired two shots so close together as the ones that struck President Kennedy and Governor Connally.

Actually, of course, this is but one possibility; another and perhaps a more likely one would have been that Oswald indeed had fired his first shot before Frame 210 while the foliage obscured his view (it was possible to see, although not well, through that foliage). This would then account for Governor Connally's statement that he heard the first shot before he was hit. In that case, the bullet that was Exhibit 399 might be either the first bullet that struck President Kennedy (and then somehow did no further damage either to itself or to the car) or the second bullet that wounded Governor Connally. Al-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

though for various reasons each of these possibilities is unlikely, neither seems more so than Epstein's alternative.

Despite his having leaped to the most sensational of the conclusions that follow from his own arguments, Epstein's attack upon the one-bullet theory deserves careful attention. It has two independent parts, either of which, if accepted, would be enough to demolish that theory. The first, and by far the most discussed, involves the nature of the wounds on President Kennedy's body. According to the Commission, the first bullet to strike the President hit him in the back of the neck-shoulder area and continued in a downward path, exiting from his neck below the Adam's apple and then continuing downward, striking Governor Connally who was sitting in the jump seat ahead of the President. This conclusion, however, had not been obvious at the beginning. The doctors at Parkland Hospital where the President was first brought noticed a wound on his throat below the necktie line. They were concerned solely with prolonging the President's life, and, since they did not turn him over, they failed to note the wound in the back of his neck-shoulder area. As a result, they concluded that the visible wound "might be" an entrance wound. They then cut through this wound as part of a tracheotomy, obscuring it completely. Later, when the body was flown to Washington for autopsy, the autopsy surgeons noted what they thought was clearly an entrance wound in the back neck-shoulder area. They could find no exit wound, however, and it was only when, the next morning, they talked to the doctors who had treated the President at Parkland Hospital in Dallas that the autopsy surgeons found out about the obscured wound in the front of the President's neck. Then it all became clear to them. The wound in the back, a bruise they had noted on the lung where it extends into the neck, and the obscured wound were all on a straight line extending slightly downward. From this they concluded that a bullet had been fired from above and had passed downward through the President's neck and out at an angle that, the Commission concluded, would have enabled it to strike Governor Connally in the rib cage, wrist and thigh—all of these wounds being located on a straight line.

Epstein's argument with reference to the President's wounds is basically a twofold attack on this reconstruction. He argues, first, that the bullet that struck the President did not go through his body, and, secondly, that the wound on the President's back was located much too low for the bullet to have described the path ascribed to it by the Commission. In support of his first attack, Epstein cites an F.B.I. report made at the time of the autopsy that stated, "There was no point of exit and the bullet was not in the body." A supplementary F.B.I. report dated January 13th stated, "Medical examination of the President's body had revealed that the bullet which entered his back had penetrated to a distance of less than a finger length."

Certainly, if this were true, it would demolish the one-bullet theory. Epstein states:

> Clearly the FBI summary and supplemental reports and the Warren Report give diametrically opposed findings regarding the President's autopsy. This presents a dilemma; on the one hand if the FBI reports distorted such a basic fact of the assassination, doubt is cast upon the FBI's entire investigation. . .

Actually, this is far from clear. The fact is that there are many errors in the F.B.I. reports, as, for that matter, there would be in any large-scale investigation by any agency. To agree that an agency is not infallible—which the F.B.I. most certainly is not—is something less than to "cast doubt" upon its entire investigation. The explanation that several of the Commission staff members have given is that an F.B.I. agent left before the autopsy was complete and telephoned in his report while the doctors were unable to determine the bullet's path through the President's body. (Actually, even this explanation is not necessary—until they spoke to the Parkland Hospital doctors the next morning, the autopsy surgeons did think the bullet had not passed through the President's neck.) Nor is the fact that this statement was not corrected in the supplemental report, even though

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the F.B.I. had the autopsy report by that time, grounds to imply, as Mr. Epstein does, that the infallible F.B.I. was sticking to its guns despite a false autopsy report. First of all, anyone who has dealt with a government agency knows (and I, personally, have seen it in F.B.I. reports) how information from a previous letter or report gets included in subsequent documents long after having been shown to be wrong. Furthermore, even Epstein's theory involves fallibility on the part of the F.B.I. since the proper course would have been to discuss and point out the error in the autopsy report. Finally, the assumption that the F.B.I. does and did make errors does not, as does Mr. Epstein's theory, involve perjury on the part of at least the three autopsy surgeons (one of whom, Colonel Finck, did the one-bullet theory considerable damage in an entirely different connection). Not only did these doctors have no reason to lie, but, more significant perhaps, they could have then had no possible way to know of the evidence disclosed by the Zapruder films and hence no possible knowledge that their testimony and report would prove so crucial.

The second of Epstein's points on the President's neck wounds is that the downward course of the bullet as determined by the autopsy surgeons was impossible because the bullet wound in the President's back was lower than that in his throat. If this were true, it would mean that the bullet could not have struck Governor Connally so as to cause his wounds, which clearly were made by a bullet following a downward path (the Commission calculated the angle at around eighteen degrees). Again, Epstein's case is based primarily on the reports of the investigatory agencies rather than upon those of the autopsy surgeons. Thus the Secret Service and F.B.I. reports, respectively, state that the wound was in Kennedy's "back, about six inches below the neckline," and "about four inches down from the right shoulder." Moreover, and Epstein regards this as crucial, the F.B.I. reports show that the hole in the back of the President's jacket was five and three-eighths inches below the top of the collar and that the bullet hole in the back of his shirt was five and three-quarters inches below the top of the collar. From this, Epstein concludes that the actual location of the wound was "obviously inconsistent with the position of the entrance wound" according to the Commission. At first glance, anyone not familiar with anatomy would think this was so. It just so happens, however, that in humans the front of the neck extends considerably lower than the back of the neck—an anatomical fact which the reader is strongly urged to verify. In fact, if one raises one's right arm slightly, as if to wave at a crowd, as the President was doing, one can discover that a point five and three-quarters inches below the top of the collar is slightly above a point on the neck just below the Adam's apple—where the exit wound was. If one has an exceptionally powerful shoulder development, as did President Kennedy, and allows for about an inch of "riding up" by the shirt and jacket, as one would expect on one who wears a brace, it is not unreasonable to assume the wound would be approximately two inches higher, which would account for the seventeen and two-thirds degree downward movement that the autopsy surgeons found. Interestingly enough, the autopsy surgeons located the point at which the wound was—"fourteen centimeters below the top of the right mastoid process"—a place (depending on the length of the President's neck) approximately two inches higher than the position of Kennedy's exit wound. It is hard to decide which is more astounding—the fact that Epstein could have written the book without bothering to measure or the fact that this elementary point slipped by his reviewers.

The second major prong of Epstein's assault upon the one-bullet theory concerns, not the President's wounds, but rather the condition of the putative bullet. Not only is this argument more difficult to answer than the first, but the unsoundness of Epstein's arguments on the President's wounds has perhaps deprived this issue of the full attention it deserves. Epstein's argument here is simply that the "one bullet," Exhibit 399, is in too good condition to have done all of the damage to Governor

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Connally's rib cage, his wrist and his thigh. Indeed, Colonel Finck, the only witness to be asked specifically whether Exhibit 399 could have caused Connally's wrist wound, answered, "No, for the reason that there are too many bullet fragments described in the wrist." Nonetheless, although the Commission's investigation would certainly have been more satisfactory if it had probed further into this testimony, there are reasons to believe that Exhibit 399 could have done just the damage that the Colonel denied.

First of all, Colonel Finck had not seen Governor Connally's wounds and the description that he relied upon makes it quite clear that the fragments found in Governor Connally's wrist were minute. (Another witness, Dr. Gregory, who did actually treat Governor Connally's wrist, testified that the missile that struck Governor Connally's wrist "could be virtually intact, insofar as mass was concerned.")

Second, the bullet that first struck Governor Connally in the back of the rib cage made a most unusual wound. As one of Connally's physicians described it:

> The wound entrance was an elliptical wound. In other words, it had a long diameter and a short diameter. It did not have the appearance of a wound caused by a high velocity bullet that had not struck anything else.

This kind of wound is typical of that made by a bullet that has already hit another object and is tumbling.

Third, there was expert testimony that had a bullet struck Governor Connally's wrist without having gone through other objects, it would have done far more damage than it did.

Fourth, Exhibit 399 was damaged only on the very rear end, as though it had hit bone rear end first—a condition of course consistent with the tumbling behavior of the bullet that struck Governor Connally. The refusal, then, to accept the one-bullet theory would have forced the Commission to explain what the bullet that struck Governor Connally had struck first to set it tumbling; what, other than Governor Connally's rib and wrist, Exhibit 399 could have struck rear end first; and finally what happened to the bullet that exited from the President's neck still moving fast enough to damage both itself and anything that it struck.

The conclusion is by no means an obvious one, especially since the crucial testimony—that of Governor Connally's doctors—contains many inconsistencies, some of which point away from the one-bullet theory. On the other hand, when, in addition to raising all these questions, the most significant of the theories alternative to the one-bullet theory presupposed a second assassin firing from the same area as Lee Harvey Oswald but who, unlike Oswald, left no trace at all, it was hardly unreasonable for the Commission to decide that the probabilities favored the one-bullet theory.

Although, of the two major substantive points in Epstein's book, the first is almost certainly wrong and the second quite dubious, Epstein spends most of his effort on what seems a useful and probably is a reasonably accurate description of the Warren Commission's procedures. Epstein's own treatment of the substantive issues, as well as the fact that many members of the Commission's staff have charged him with flagrant misquotation, forces one to withhold judgment on what might be the more significant aspect of Epstein's work.

One need not, however, withhold judgment on the most interesting—and certainly the most publicized and profitable—of the revisionist works, Mark Lane's *Rush to Judgment*. It is a wide-ranging attack on almost every conclusion of the Warren Commission, and at least initially leaves the reader thinking that if only a tenth of Lane's assertions are true, he has more than made his case that the Warren Commission's performance is a major national disgrace. The problem is that if the reader (as, of course, few readers do) begins to check the assertions in *Rush to Judgment* against the evidence, he will find in many instances that he has been expertly gulled. In short, nowhere near a tenth of Lane's relevant assertions and implications stand up to careful scrutiny.

Not that the book is an easy one to demolish. The enormous range of his attacks

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

on the Commission has allowed Mr. Lane to profit not only by the reluctance of book reviewers to dig deeply into the evidence, but also, perhaps, by the decision of some periodicals not to give the book the respectability that would come of discussing it in detail. Moreover, a major factor that makes Lane's book especially difficult to review is that he presents no coherent theory as to the Presidential assassination. Rather he presents a long string of weakly connected points without any one crucial point at which his theory can be destroyed. Proving his points insubstantial, therefore, is almost an endless task and the complete demolishing of one point still leaves people —as, I regret to say, it will leave many readers of this piece—demanding why this or that point has not been refuted.

Lane's technique can best be appreciated by examining his effort to prove that the shots fired at the Presidential limousine came not from the sixth floor of the Texas School Book Depository where Oswald's rifle was found, but from a grassy knoll in front of and to the right of the Presidential car. Essentially, his argument makes two points: one, that the noise of shots appeared to come from the area of the knoll rather than from the Book Depository, and second, that a puff of smoke was seen rising from the area of the knoll at about the time the President was shot. Indeed, he is able to make his case with a certain amount of persuasiveness—but only at the cost of completely distorting the evidence. On the issue of where the noise came from, Lane convinces us that many (but by no means the preponderance, he would imply) of those at the site of the assassination thought that the shots came from near the grassy knoll. Lane does not, however, bother setting out the highly relevant testimony of a railroad worker named Lee Bowers, Jr., although he relies on that witness for other points. Bowers testified that because of an echo in the area it was almost impossible to tell whether a noise came from the overpass near the grassy knoll or from the Depository building. Bowers had noted this before the assassination when the workers near the knoll could not tell whether noises originating in some work being done on the Depository building came from that building or from the overpass nearby. Moreover, although there were certainly many witnesses who thought that the shots came from the grassy knoll area, Lane is not content merely with them. He quotes his own interview with witness James L. Simmons in which Simmons says that the sound of shots came from "the left and in front of us toward the wooden fence," without mentioning the fact that some eighteen months earlier Simmons had testified before the Warren Commission that he had the impression the shots came from the Book Depository.

Lane's argument as to the smoke over the knoll is equally interesting. Actually, there was no dispute about this; there was a puff above the knoll—one witness described it as "of smoke or steam," another said it was "vapor eight feet above the ground." The Commission made no attempt to deny this. Lane's sleight of hand is to concentrate on the presence of the smoke and take as obvious the assumption that the puff came from a gun fired at the President. Thus he quotes witness Clemon E. Johnson as saying that he saw white smoke but does not go further to note Johnson's statement that he "felt that this smoke came from a motorcycle abandoned near the spot by a Dallas policeman." Moreover, unless the assassin fired a sixteenth-century arquebus it is hard to see how a shot fired at the President could have made as much smoke as Lane convinces us was visible. Then too, the area was teeming with people; and although it is conceivable that a man with a rifle might not have been seen, not only was this most unlikely but—perhaps more significantly—it was so dangerous that it is hard to believe any assassin with even minimum rationality would choose such a spot. Finally, and of course most important, the physical evidence indicates beyond any reasonable doubt that the two shots that struck those in the Presidential limousine were fired from the rear and from above and that there is no physical trace of any other would-be assassin.

The question of the smoke over the grassy knoll indicates another of Lane's

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

techniques. He has excoriated the Commission both in his book and in innumerable public appearances for not calling witnesses who could have testified that a puff of smoke was seen over the grassy knoll. The implication is, first, that in this matter the Commission did at best a slovenly job in not calling those witnesses, (whose statements to the F.B.I. were before the Commission) and, second, that this testimony would (or could) have changed the Commission's conclusions. The obvious untruth of the second implication shows why the first is also false.

But going through Lane's book piece by piece is so time- and space-consuming that, after this brief taste of his technique, it is more appropriate merely to classify his methods of distortion.

First, there is the rank distortion of a witness's testimony. Thus, to bolster his argument that the shots came from the grassy knoll area, Lane discusses the testimony of Lee Bowers:

He told Commission counsel that "something occurred in this particular spot which was out of the ordinary, which attracted my eye for some reason, which I could not identify."
Q. "You couldn't describe it?"
Bowers: "Nothing that I could pinpoint as having happened that—"

Before Bowers could conclude this most important sentence, the Commission lawyer interrupted with an unrelated question. A little later Bowers was excused as a witness, leaving unexplained what it was in the area behind the fence that caught his eye at the moment the President was shot.

In a subsequent interview with me which was filmed and tape-recorded, however, Bowers offered more detailed information on this important point.

Bowers: At the time of the shooting, in the vicinity of where the two men I have described were, there was a flash of light or, as far as I am concerned, something I could not identify, but there was something which occurred which caught my eye in this immediate area on the embankment. Now, what this was, I could not state at that time and at this time I could not identify it, other than there was some unusual occurrence—a flash of light or smoke or something which caused me to feel like something out of the ordinary had occurred there.

Lane: In reading your testimony, Mr. Bowers, it appears that just as you were about to make that statement, you were interrupted in the middle of the sentence by the Commission counsel, who then went into another area.
Bowers: Well, that's correct. I mean, I was simply trying to answer his questions, and he seemed to be satisfied with the answer to that one and did not care for me to elaborate.

Lane's implication that the counsel for the Commission wished to avoid this revelation is typical of his approach. The dialogue just before the testimony which Lane quotes, however, casts a certain light upon what actually happened before the Commission.

Mr. Ball: "When you said there was a commotion, what do you mean by that? What did it look like to you when you were looking at the commotion?"
Bowers: "I am just unable to describe rather than it was something out of the ordinary, a sort of milling around, but something occurred in this particular spot which was out of the ordinary, which attracted my eye for some reason, which I could not identify."

Moreover, eight questions earlier, the question and answer went as follows:

Ball: "Did you see any activity in this high ground above Elm after the shot?"
Bowers: "At the time of the shooting there seemed to be some commotion, and immediately following there was a motorcycle policeman who shot nearly all of the way to the top of the incline."

Finally, Lane does not set out the very end of Bowers' testimony—which hardly supports his view that the Commission was trying to hide something.

Ball: "Is there anything that you told me that I haven't asked you about you can think of?"
Bowers: "Nothing that I recall."
Ball: "You have told me all that you know about this, haven't you?"
Bowers: "Yes, I believe that I have related everything which I have told the city police, and also told to the F.B.I."

The second technique Lane uses is the careful and factual presentation of one side of a case without indicating, in any way, that powerful reasons exist for reject-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ing the conclusion to which this side might point. Probably the best example of this technique is his discussion of the palm print on Oswald's rifle.

When Oswald's rifle was first sent from Dallas to the F.B.I. for examination, it contained a number of notations as to possible fingerprints—none of which could positively be identified as Oswald's. Some days later, when Oswald's death had mooted Texas' case against him, all of the miscellaneous evidence against him not previously sent for examination was forwarded to the F.B.I. Then it was discovered that included in this batch, among the miscellaneous documents and pictures, was a piece of scotch tape with a notation that on it was a palm print lifted from the rifle. This palm print turned out to be the only print on the weapon positively identifiable as Oswald's. The Dallas police officer, J. C. Day, who lifted the print stated that he had not bothered noting this when the rifle was first sent to Washington because he thought that enough of the lifted print was still identifiable on the weapon—an assertion which Lane calls "incredible" in view of the fact that the F.B.I. expert testified that no such print remained. With this evidence and the statement by Dallas Police Chief Curry that

> If we can put his prints on the rifle, why, it'll certainly connect him with the rifle, and if we can establish that this is the rifle that killed the President, why. . .

Lane has a field day. Indeed he makes a very persuasive case for the proposition that the "lifted" print was an afterthought by the Dallas police after the rifle had been sent to Washington, and that Oswald's prints had never been on the gun at all. Unfortunately, Lane does not choose to mention the only remaining piece of evidence on the issue. In response to a request from the Commission, the F.B.I. fingerprint expert reexamined the lifted palm print and was able to determine that the interruptions in the print caused by the nicks and scratches in the surface of the material from which the print had been lifted exactly matched the nicks and scratches in Oswald's gun—thus proving beyond question that Oswald's palm print had indeed been lifted from the rifle.

Lane's use of this technique does not always rise even to the level of one-sided truth. Thus, to make his case that the bullet that struck the President's neck was fired from the front, not from the rear, Lane not only relies heavily upon the original impression of the doctors at Parkland Hospital, but he badly distorts their views as well. Lane quotes out of context to make it appear that they thought the wound was an entrance wound because of something in its appearance rather than merely because it was the only wound they saw. Far more important than this, however, is Lane's failure to mention what is probably the crucial and irrefutable evidence on the issue of which direction the shots came from—the President's clothing. Lane does not bother telling us that the fibers around the bullet hole both in the back of the President's jacket and in the back of his shirt were pointed inward, while the fibers on the front of his collar were pushed outward.

Lane's third basic technique is to set himself up as his own expert witness—although not of course under oath. He states that a picture taken at the time of the assassination shows Jack Ruby in the crowd, not in the offices of the Dallas *Morning News,* where the Commission placed him. To this type of assertion one can only say that as close an examination of the picture as I could make did not reveal to me that this was Jack Ruby (indeed, I would say quite the contrary) and I am certain that I am as familiar with Jack Ruby's picture as is Mr. Lane. Lane, however, is not satisfied with accusing the Commission of ignoring Ruby's presence; he has built upon his identification to accuse the Commission of cropping the picture for the purpose of hiding the refutation of its own version. In fact, as pointed out by Wesley Liebeler, a professor at the U.C.L.A. Law School and probably the Commission's most articulate defender, all that happened was that the edge of the picture was removed because the Commission was using it solely to show the action at its center and because the edge

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

showing "Ruby" was under the cardboard holder of the thirty-five millimeter slide. Moreover, as Liebeler points out, in deciding whether the Commission was trying to suppress this evidence, it is relevant to consider that one can get the slide in question, plus several others, by sending about two dollars to Phil Willis Enterprises, Post Office Box 17266, Dallas.

The technique of acting as one's own expert witness can be combined with the previously mentioned technique of leaving out crucial evidence, as Lane does when he insists that the famous picture of Oswald carrying a rifle (Exhibit 133(a)) is a composite of which only the head was Oswald's. Lane says he is led to this conclusion by his own observations of the shadows on the face and on the body. The reader can examine the picture for himself, but it does appear to me that the picture was a composite. Of course, on this issue, I would rely neither on my own nor on Lane's observations. There is relevant expert testimony, which Lane does not mention. An F.B.I. photographic expert testified before the Commission that his microscopic examination of the picture convinced him that it was not a composite. Moreover, although the negative of the photograph Lane attacks was not discovered, the police found among Oswald's belongings the negative of another picture (Exhibit 133(b)) which also showed Oswald holding a rifle. An examination of this picture indicates that it was taken at the same time as its more famous companion (Oswald is wearing the same clothing and his hair is combed in exactly the same way in both photographs) and as to this picture the evidence is overwhelming. The photographic expert testified that an examination of this negative and of Oswald's camera (which was also in evidence) showed not only that the negative was not a composite but that it had been taken with Oswald's own camera.

The fourth of Lane's basic techniques involves the gross logical fallacy. Thus, he argues at some length that Lee Oswald was not a good enough shot to have assassinated the President in the way the Commission stated that he did, and therefore by implication that Oswald could not have been the assassin. At first glance the logical connection between the propositions seems apparent but a little thought reveals that ability to perform a task means two entirely different things. First, one's inability to lift, without aid, a ten thousand pound weight or run a mile in three minutes is such that, regardless of any other evidence, we could conclude that such a thing just could not have happened. When we say, however, that someone is not a good enough shot to hit a given target two out of three times, we are speaking of an entirely different kind of inability. What we mean, of course, is that one is not good enough to do this consistently, and although the chance of one's having made a particular shot becomes less and less as the shot becomes more difficult, or as one's marksmanship ability decreases, it is always possible for one to have made a lucky shot or two. Thus, the fallacy in Lane's argument is in asking whether Oswald was a good enough shot to have hit the moving targets twice in a given time, at a given distance, instead of asking whether the unlikelihood of Oswald's making those shots is enough to shake our conviction that he in fact did so. This of course depends upon the strength of the other evidence that Oswald was the killer—an inquiry which Lane nowhere mentions in this context. In fact, if one estimates the probabilities involved, I would have to say that if the question were asked in advance, the odds of Oswald's making the necessary shots were about one in fifty (although who can say to what extent it concentrates the mind to have the President of the United States in one's telescopic sights). On the other hand, I would have to say that the other evidence, not counting that of Oswald's marksmanship, would lead to the odds of about one thousand to one that Oswald had been the assassin, after all. It may sound paradoxical, but a little thought reveals that the very best evidence that Oswald was able to make the shots is the mass of evidence that he in fact did so.

Number five among Lane's techniques—one which we have already alluded to—is to set up straw men, and attack the Com-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

mission on points where he does not even disagree with its conclusions. We have seen one variation earlier where Lane denounced the Commission for not calling further witnesses who had seen smoke above the knoll. Another variant of this is to quote a statement from the Commission's report and to demolish it completely —never pointing out that his quotation is so slanted as not to have represented the Commission's view in the first place. Thus Lane quotes the Commission as saying,

> Jesse Curry, Chief of the Dallas Police Department testified that no more than 25 to 50 of Dallas's almost 1200 policemen were acquainted with Ruby.

Then he goes on to show that Curry—and of course inferentially the Commission—had grossly underestimated the extent of Ruby's acquaintanceship with policemen and that Ruby in fact knew closer to five hundred policemen than fifty. Lane's demonstration is indeed correct, but if one reads what the Commission originally had to say on the issue his point becomes somewhat less compelling. Immediately after the sentence Lane quoted, the Commission adds,

> However, the reports of present and past members of the Dallas Police Department as well as Ruby's employees and acquaintances indicate that Ruby's police friendships were far more widespread than those of the average citizen.

Obviously the Commission saw no need to demonstrate the gross underestimation of the Dallas Police Chief, and contented itself with a broad hint.

The remarkable thing about *Rush to Judgment* is that we have hardly scratched the surface in numbering and classifying Lane's distortions. There are more and more and more.

More recently, Lane has defended himself on the grounds that "My book is not an objective analysis," but more like a brief for Oswald. First of all, this defense comes only after Lane has been backed into a corner. Nothing in the book or in its publicity indicates to the uninformed reader that Lane is anything but objective —outraged, perhaps, by the dishonesty and deceit he finds all around him, but nonetheless, objective. Furthermore, the idea that *Rush to Judgment* might merely be a brief for Oswald completely misconstrues the nature of a brief. True, an advocate has a certain latitude to emphasize some facts and de-emphasize others. But Lane carries this far beyond mere advocacy to the point of extreme misrepresentation and distortion.

We may pass over *Whitewash* by Harold Weisberg, in just a sentence. It is the most strident, bitter and generally irrationally biased of all the attacks on the Commission. Out of charity, we shall mention it no further and move on to Leo Sauvage's *The Oswald Affair.*

Sauvage, the American correspondent of *Le Figaro,* has written an absolutely bewildering book, which in some ways is very different from Lane's and in others quite similar.

As in the case of Lane, the number and variety of Sauvage's objections to the Commission's version (and many of them are very different from Lane's) are so great that it is impossible even to begin to cover them all here. His technique, however, is a fairly simple one. First, in discussing each question, he begins with the initial reports coming out of Dallas in the first hectic moments after the assassination. These were almost always so wrong and garbled that now that a great deal more evidence has been made available, they are sitting ducks. Then he proceeds to discuss the reports and rumors that seeped out with all too great frequency during the Warren Commission investigation. On most occasions these turned out in one way or another to have been inaccurate, too; and where they were not, Sauvage damns them for having been leaked at all. Finally, then, when he comes to the evidence presented by the Commission, Sauvage has the reader psychologically prepared to find that, like everything before it, it too is a tissue of lies.

Sauvage indeed seems convinced that America has another Dreyfus case (an analogy he uses on several occasions) and that Oswald had no hand whatsoever in the assassination. In Sauvage's words, "I

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

find nothing to show that Oswald was the assassin of President Kennedy," and, "It is logically untenable, legally indefensible and morally inadmissable to declare Lee Harvey Oswald the assassin . . ."

Unlike Lane, who makes use of a broad range of tactics to attack the Commission, Sauvage concentrates primarily on just one: a refusal to accept the most likely—often even the most overwhelmingly likely—thrust of the evidence because in his opinion it does not amount to a certainty.

Probably the most perverse of all of Sauvage's findings is that, as he has since phrased it, "there is no legally acceptable proof that Oswald had the revolver [ascribed to him] in his possession at the time of his arrest."

Sauvage's reconstruction of the seizure of the revolver (Exhibit 143) from Oswald is almost a virtuoso performance. He correctly points out what he considers to be an error in the testimony of Officer McDonald, the first policeman to approach Oswald in the Texas Theater following the slaying of Officer Tippit. McDonald, who identified Exhibit 143 as the revolver he had taken from Oswald, could, in all probability, not of his own knowledge be sure that it was the same gun, since he had handed it to another officer before his struggle with Oswald had ended.

Sauvage next moves on to the testimony of Officer Carroll, the policeman whom McDonald identified as having received the revolver during the struggle. Carroll, when asked by the Commission who had hold of the pistol at the time he took it, stated:

> I don't know, sir; I just saw the pistol pointing at me and grabbed it and jerked it away from whoever had it, and that's all, and by that time then, the handcuffs were put on Oswald.

Carroll himself did not identify the gun but merely stated that he had given it to Officer Hill. Officer Hill then testified that he kept the gun in his possession until he had time to scratch his name on it and was thus able positively to identify Exhibit 143 as the gun that Carroll gave him.

The flaw Sauvage finds in this testimony that leads him to conclude that

> The testimony of the three policemen directly involved does not support the conclusion that a gun was taken from Oswald at the Texas Theater . . .

is that Carroll said that he did not know who had hold of the pistol and that

> the fact that McDonald stated that he had given the pistol to Carroll is utterly meaningless . . . Though neither of the Commission attorneys saw fit to ask any question to this effect, it is quite obvious that McDonald, fighting with Oswald and swarmed by officers, could not have seen which one took the pistol, if he did give the pistol to someone.

Actually, what is "quite obvious" to Sauvage is not at all clear. McDonald may very well have seen Carroll as he testified he did, even though Carroll did not know that McDonald was holding the other end of the gun.

But this is only the beginning. In addition to the testimony of the officers mentioned by Sauvage, it is interesting to note the testimony of Officer C. T. Walker:

> Belin: "When you saw Oswald's hand by his belt, which hand do you see then?"
> Walker: "He had a hold of the handle of it."
> Belin: "Handle of what?"
> Walker: "The revolver."
> Belin: "Was there a revolver there?"
> Walker: "Yes, there was."

Detective Paul L. Bentley stated:

> Just as I entered the lower floor, I saw Patrolman McDonald fighting with the suspect. I saw the suspect pull a pistol from his shirt, so I went to Patrolman McDonald's aid immediately.

Patrolman Ray Hawkins stated:

> Officer Walker and I ran toward the subject and grabbed him by his left arm. The subject had reached in his belt for a gun and Officer McDonald was holding his right hand with a gun in it. Officer Hutson had entered the row behind the suspect and grabbed him around the neck.

Patrolman T. A. Hutson stated:

> Officer C. T. Walker came up and struggling with the suspect's left hand, and as Officer McDonald struggled with the suspect's right hand, he moved it to his waist and drew a pistol . . .

As if this were not enough, Oswald ad-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

mitted to at least twelve police officers and federal agents that he had possessed a pistol in the theater—each time coupling it with a statement that that was all they had him for. Sauvage handles these statements with the assertion:

> The Commission notes that "Oswald admitted nothing that would damage him, but discussed other matters quite freely." The fact of owning a revolver that the police had said had killed Tippit would certainly tend to damage him. It would seem from the report therefore that Oswald did not admit that.

Mr. Sauvage carries his perversity to extremes in this quotation. Obviously, the reasonable construction of this sentence of the report is that Oswald admitted nothing that he was not completely convinced the authorities could prove. At the time there was no ballistic determination of who shot Officer Tippit, and Oswald obviously believed—and on the evidence one can hardly blame him—that his possession of the pistol could be conclusively established.

Finally, if Exhibit 143 was not the gun that Oswald was seen by all to draw, then where did it come from? It did belong—as Sauvage concedes—to Oswald, having been purchased by him some half a year earlier. Could the gun have been brought into the theater by one of the police officers? If so, what was he doing with the gun that fired the shells found beside Officer Tippit's body—especially at a time when he could not have known that this was so? Nor could a police officer have obtained the revolver from Oswald's room after the arrest since the revolver was initialed immediately after it was taken in the Texas Theater, before the officers even knew who Oswald was. Moreover, if Exhibit 143 was not the gun Oswald drew, what happened to the gun he did draw? It apparently has disappeared completely. Perhaps Sauvage would suggest as the alternative explanation a complicated conspiracy among at least a dozen police officers, none of whom was near the assassination site and none of whom could, by any way we can conceive of, have known in advance where they would find Oswald. Admittedly, in the face of all this, a sufficiently desperate defense attorney, to take the prosecution's time and to try to confuse the jury, might conceivably argue that it had not been proven conclusively that Exhibit 143 was taken from Oswald at the theater. But to say that the evidence "does not support the conclusion" is more than merely farfetched.

Although some of Sauvage's book could have been written by Mark Lane—Sauvage asserts "Lee Harvey Oswald did not have the skill required to commit the assassination"—for the most part their attitudes are quite different. Lane does not mention any evidence that does not lead his reader along his chosen path. Thus Lane does not mention one word about the circumstances of Oswald's arrest—the reader of *Rush to Judgment* might well conclude that Oswald had turned himself in to the police. Sauvage, on the other hand, generally mentions evidence he finds uncomfortable but applies his bewildering logic to minimize its effect or to turn it to his advantage. A fine example of this is Sauvage's treatment of the General Walker incident. The Commission concluded that one of the circumstances strengthening its belief that Oswald had killed President Kennedy was the fact that Oswald was the author of a previous assassination attempt some five months earlier on General Edwin C. Walker. The Commission evidence on this issue was not overly strong, relying in great part on the somewhat unreliable testimony of Marina Oswald. During the investigation a note in Oswald's handwriting turned up that indicated that he had expected to be in some kind of trouble shortly. Marina Oswald explained to the Commission that her husband had left this note behind one night and then appeared later that night and explained that he had just attempted to kill General Walker. Sauvage spends some time demolishing this theory, pointing out that Oswald had not returned home with his rifle and that therefore it would have been necessary for him to stash it somewhere near General Walker's house. (According to Marina's testimony, he had told her he had done just this.) Moreover,

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Sauvage points out that it was "never explained how Oswald got to Walker's house" since he had no car. Of course it was possible, Sauvage admits, that he took a bus. Sauvage asks us to:

> Imagine Oswald with his rifle under his arm marching off to slay the General and planning to return home the same way . . . I doubt very much that Lee Harvey Oswald, before reaching home, white and shaking, could make use of those buses and transfers, walk to and from the bus stops, wait at the bus stops for some time (the buses in Dallas, as elsewhere, do not run frequently at night) and do this all without being noticed by anyone.

Certainly Sauvage does point out a number of unlikely aspects to the story. On the other hand, we do know that among Oswald's possessions were found several photographs of General Walker's home, and since microscopic examination revealed that they were taken with Oswald's camera, we are not completely without hard evidence tying him in some way to General Walker. Moreover, the dates involved may be relevant. The picture of Walker's house was taken on March 9th or 10th, 1963. (This was determined from the progress on a building under construction shown in the background.) On March 12th Oswald bought the money order, under an assumed name, which he mailed in to purchase his rifle; on March 20th the rifle was mailed out to him and on April 10th the attempt on General Walker's life occurred.

Sauvage's technique, however, requires him to make mention of the photographs and he quotes the Commission as saying, "Three photographs found among Oswald's possessions after the assassination were identified by Marina Oswald as photographs of General Walker's house." He concentrates, however, on pointing out an inconsistency he finds between this statement and an earlier statement of the Commission: "Until December 3, 1963, the Walker shooting remained unsolved." Since the pictures were found eleven or twelve days earlier than this date,

> Wasn't it strange that the Federal investigators who examined the pictures failed to identify them when they could have checked with the tourist bureau, the Chamber of Commerce, cab drivers or the Boy Scouts. . . ?

To me, it seems hardly strange at all that in the first eleven days after the assassination no one had identified the pictures of General Walker's house. Presumably, police were working on all facets of Oswald and there was no reason at the very beginning of the investigation to think that those pictures might be significant. Indeed, considering the circumstances, the time lag of eleven days seems rather short.

Subsequently (and here he reveals most clearly his talent for missing the point) Sauvage is willing to assume for the sake of argument that Oswald did attempt to kill General Walker. In that case, however, he would regard this as evidence not that Oswald killed President Kennedy but that he did not. Sauvage states:

> I am ready to admit that Oswald was against Fascists and that he might have been led to undertake some action against a Walker. Would the same reason have led him to kill a Kennedy?

To me the fact, if it were so (and it was admittedly not conclusive), that Oswald had attempted to kill General Walker would be reasonably persuasive evidence. True, in criminal prosecutions, it would probably have been held inadmissible, but the reason for this would be not so much because it is not probative, but rather because it is, in a sense, too probative and therefore prejudicial. The significant thing—and in our society the far more rare thing—shown by the attempt on General Walker's life is not that Oswald was against fascists, but that he was capable of killing a man who had done him no personal wrong. Sauvage, of course, is perfectly correct in stating that the absence of a motive for Oswald to kill the President is some reason to believe that he did not do it. But it seems that the significant thing the attempt to kill Walker would indicate is that, in Oswald, we had a man who could kill from ambush a man who had done him no personal harm and from whose death he could not expect to profit.

One must be very careful not to use up all of one's synonyms for perversity on Mr.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

JOHNS HOPKINS PAPERBACKS

The Finer Tone

Keats' Major Poems

By Earl R. Wasserman. Of his thorough textual explication of five of Keats' major poems—*Ode on a Grecian Urn, La Belle Dame Sans Merci, The Eve of St. Agnes, Lamia,* and *Ode to a Nightingale*—Professor Wasserman wrote, "My main intention is to unfold the richness . . . within Keats' poems by probing beyond their verbal level and seeking to learn both how their *poetry* qualifies the surface meaning and what the *poetry,* as distinct from merely verbal content, states in itself." JH-32/240 pages/$2.25

The Seventh Solitude

Metaphysical Homelessness in Kierkegaard, Dostoevsky, and Nietzsche

By Ralph Harper. In these three predecessors of existentialism, all of whom were profoundly influenced by Stendhal, the author finds evidence of that spiritual isolation which leads ultimately to personal solitude and philosophical nihilism. To these negative modes of being he opposes the alternatives embodied by St. Augustine and Proust—the passion for God and the passion for creation. JH-30/168 pages/$1.95

Savagism and Civilization

By Roy Harvey Pearce. In this study of the concept of "savagism"—as reflected in American writings on the Indian that appeared in political pamphlets, missionaries' reports, drama, poetry, novels, and anthropologists' accounts—Roy Harvey Pearce traces the conflict between the idea of the "noble savage" and the need to Christianize the heathen which ended with the rejection and virtual extermination of Indian culture. JH-29/272 pages/$2.45

Legal Philosophy from Plato to Hegel

By Huntington Cairns. In this study of the legal systems proposed by Plato, Aristotle, Cicero, Aquinas, Bacon, Lebniz, Hobbes, Spinoza, Locke, Kant, Fichte, and Hegel, Huntington Cairns points out that modern legal procedure is essentially a continuation of a long history of legal philosophy. JH-31/600 pages/$3.95

The Guilty Mind

Psychiatry and the Law of Homicide

By John Biggs, Jr. The concept of guilt has throughout history hinged on the definition of what constitutes soundness of mind. In this Isaac Ray Award Series book Judge Biggs traces the inter-related development of law and psychiatry from their origins in primitive society to the present day. He claims that American criminal law over-emphasizes the concept of guilt when confronted with the mentally ill, and suggests ways in which psychiatry may be used both to deter crime and to rehabilitate the criminal. JH-33/248 pages/$2.25

THE JOHNS HOPKINS PRESS
Baltimore, Maryland 21218

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Sauvage's book lest one run out before coming to Richard Popkin's *The Second Oswald.* Actually *The Second Oswald* is only a thin paperback that has had to be padded with nine appendices to make it as long as it is. It is essentially Popkin's long and widely discussed review of the four previously mentioned books, which first appeared in the *New York Review of Books.*

Popkin, chairman of the department of philosophy at the University of California, San Diego, has grasped one of the great truths that has eluded most of the other critics of the Commission. It is one thing to attack the Commission's conclusion on this or that issue as not being based upon the evidence or as being the less likely of two possibilities. It is entirely different, though, to attempt to work all the evidence one accepts into one coherent theory. Popkin understands the fallacy of agreeing at the same time with Epstein that there probably was an assassin in addition to Oswald behind and above the President; with Sauvage that Oswald had nothing to do with the assassination; and with Lane that the shots were fired not from the Book Depository but from the grassy knoll. Popkin realizes that if one agrees with Epstein that the autopsy doctors misplaced the President's wounds, one should be prepared to offer some explanation why they should do this; that if one agrees with Lane that a bullet struck the President in the front of the throat, one should be prepared to explain what happened both to the bullet and to its exit wound; and that if one agrees with Sauvage that Oswald had nothing to do with the attempt on General Walker's life, one should offer an explanation of why he happened to have in his possession a picture of General Walker's house. The discipline required by having to have a theory rather than merely attacking on a large number of isolated points is that one's points and the evidence one accepts must then be consistent.

Popkin therefore makes the effort and his result is so silly that it is hard to believe that he is serious.

In many ways this is quite unfortunate, because several of Popkin's ideas might well have been made into a theory considerably less unlikely than the one he finally chooses. Essentially, the problem that Popkin tries to explain and that throws his theory off is that several identifications of Oswald were made in testimony before the Commission that could not possibly have been correct, since Oswald was undeniably proved to be elsewhere at the time. If Popkin had decided, as the Commission did, that therefore these witnesses were either unintentionally wrong or lying, he would have had no further trouble. In fact, there is good reason to believe that at least one of the witnesses was lying in an attempt to gain publicity. If one accepts their testimony as true, however, as does Popkin, one has to conclude either that Oswald was in two different places at the same time or that there were two Oswalds. Essentially, Popkin's theory is the latter: that the witnesses who identified Oswald as having been in places where he clearly could not have been were correct in the main and that they had been thrown off by an extremely complicated scheme to set up a false trail.

The crime was then to be committed by both Oswalds with the rifle implicating Lee Oswald left at the assassination scene. The second Oswald, who was a better shot and used a better gun than Lee, then could disappear and when the evidence all came in it would be so confused that it would be impossible to convict the actual Oswald.

Mark Lane in one of his chapters uses a variant of this theory in which Oswald was an innocent patsy. If one does this, however, the incident in the Texas Theater is most difficult to explain. Moreover, framing poor Oswald does seem a great deal of trouble for the conspirators to go to at a time when for all they knew by the time President Kennedy arrived in Dallas, Oswald might have either lost his job or gone to Mexico. And even if they could be certain that Oswald would still be working at the Depository they could not possibly know that he would not have been out in the street or elsewhere with a perfect alibi at the time of the shooting.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

World War I and the American Novel

By Stanley Cooperman

This book is an account of the staggering impact on American novelists of the heroic crusade and bloody debacle which was the First World War. Mr. Cooperman cuts through the nostalgic myths which have grown up around the Roaring Twenties and penetrates to the heartbreak and despair—and fierce energy—that not only influenced the mood of a generation of writers but in a real sense created it. He shows Hemingway, Dos Passos, Cummings, Faulkner, and many others grappling with the unique crisis of their time, and places their work in a context not only of literary criticism, but of the war propaganda, military critiques, memoirs, and journalism of the period. $6.50

The Metamorphoses of the Circle

By Georges Poulet, translated by Carley Dawson and Elliott Coleman

The circle, M. Poulet contends, is the most immutable of those forms that serve as the structural basis of mind. Beginning with the medieval concept of God as an infinite circle, M. Poulet traces the metamorphoses of the circle in the works of the Renaissance and the Baroque, and shows it molded by the minds of Pascal, Balzac, Poe, Flaubert, Baudelaire, James, Claudel, Eliot, and many others. The resulting comparisons are illuminating. $10.00

Passionate Intelligence

Imagination and Reason in the Work of Samuel Johnson

By Arieh Sachs

In Dr. Sachs's view, the work of Samuel Johnson is a culmination of the Christian humanist heritage, and Johnson should be read in the same spirit as Pascal. In this study he examines the ideas associated with words like "vacuity," "expectation," "novelty," and "attention," which recur throughout Johnson's writing, and shows their relation to his central concepts of Reason and Imagination. The resulting analysis provides new insights into Johnson's moral, aesthetic, political, and pscyhological thought. $4.95

Florence in Transition

Vol. I: The Decline of the Commune

By Marvin B. Becker

Using the Florentine polis as a laboratory in which to examine the decline of late medieval culture and the emergence of the Renaissance, Dr. Becker surveys a wide range of activities—mercantile, juridical, political, and aesthetic—and explores the hopeful beliefs of poets, preachers, and chroniclers that the Florentine citizenry could be educated in the arts of good government. He then shows how these communal ideals gave way, under the stress of political and economic crises, to a series of futile resorts culminating in the expedient of despotism, out of which emerged at last a democratized regime that was intensely legalistic and puritanical. $7.50

THE JOHNS HOPKINS PRESS
Baltimore, Maryland 21218

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

On the other hand, if Oswald was, as Popkin seems to assume, a willing party to the whole false trail, one might point out that in that case the trail would in great part not have been false at all. One might then ask what could have been Oswald's possible object in having the trail lead to himself, especially considering the fact that he would end up being tried before a Texas jury that, having heard about his Marxist past, might well not require a vast amount of evidence to give him the death penalty?

But more basically the problem with Popkin's conspiracy is that no sane or even mildly insane person would have done it the way he has suggested. The scene as Popkin visualizes it has two men shooting with different rifles at the Presidential car. (Early in the book it seems that both are in the Book Depository—later Popkin either forgets this and places one on the grassy knoll or adds, without explanation, a third assassin at that site.) If it turns out —as they have no way of making sure it doesn't—that the identifiable bullet is fired not from Oswald's gun but from the other Oswald's gun, the entire scheme blows up completely. As it is, Popkin argues that Exhibit 399 was planted beside Governor Connally's stretcher—presumably by someone who knew that there would be need for a bullet damaged only on the rear end. One would think that if the second Oswald was able to get out of the Book Depository with his rifle without even being seen, there would be no reason to leave Lee Oswald behind as some kind of a hostage.

If Popkin's conspirators to assassinate President Kennedy from the Texas Book Depository were as clever as he makes them out, they could have had Oswald, who worked there, and his friend, the other marksman, fire their shots, then put their rifles in a previously prepared box full either of high explosives or thermite, touch the thing off with a short fuse and appear in the hallway asking what had happened. Since the murder weapons would then have been completely destroyed and there would have been no eyewitnesses, there would have been nothing against either man. Oswald could have said that he decided the best place to watch the parade was from a nearby window and that he had asked his friend, the marksman, to visit with him.

True, there are many ways one can suggest in which the crime, as reconstructed by the Commission, could have been better planned. Obviously, Oswald did not plan it well himself, and one would think that if he had help, that help was much more lucky than skillful. On the other hand, it is one thing to say that it was not well-planned and it is a very different thing to say, as Mr. Popkin does, that it was planned without even the minimum elements of rationality.

The aforementioned five books, their publicity releases, and the public appearances of their authors constitute the great bulk of the third stage of inquiry into the assassination. The "mysterious death" issue, however, brought up after their publication (*Rush to Judgment* mentions it but gives it relatively little attention), probably has to be accounted a legitimate portion of this stage, too. A number of magazines, the most publicized of which is *Ramparts,* have published stories commenting on and drawing the most sinister implications from the "mysterious" deaths of "witnesses" somehow connected with the assassination. Although this facet of the inquiry (like the curse of Tutankhamen of a few decades ago) has received a great deal of comment, even the most cursory examination of the stories shows how essentially foolish they are. First of all, a good many of the deaths hardly seem mysterious in that they were caused by auto accidents, heart attacks and other phenomena that afflict our everyday population. Moreover, before we can tell whether even the number of these deaths is in any way unusual, we would have to know the number of equally mysterious deaths that occurred to people completely unconnected with the Warren Commission *Report.* But even apart from any statistical refutation, the theory that a set of conspirators is now devoted to wiping out a host of unimportant witnesses is almost too silly to be put forth.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Oxford University Press

The Letters of John Gay

Edited by* C. F. BURGESS, *Virginia Military Institute. In this volume, Gay's letters are brought together in a convenient, single source and considered as an entity for the first time. All of his letters known to be extant are reproduced *literatim* from the best texts available. Gay reveals himself to be a most attractive and agreeable man, and his letters are among the finest examples of the witty, sprightly, informal letters which the eighteenth century succeeded in elevating to an art form. $8.00

Malaysia

Selected Historical Readings

Edited by* JOHN BASTIN, *University of London, and* ROBIN WINKS, *Yale University. This comprehensive collection of readings relating to Malaysia is arranged and introduced so that the evolution of the component countries may be traced through more than five centuries. Over sixty readings range from a description of the founding of Malacca about 1400 (from the indigenous Sějarah Mělayu) and Tomé Pires's account of the Portuguese conquest of that city in 1511, to an account of the secession of Singapore from Malaysia. *2 maps.* $12.20

Oliver Twist

***Edited by* KATHLEEN TILLOTSON, *Bedford College, London, and* JOHN BUTT.** *Oliver Twist* is the first volume to appear in the Clarendon edition of Dickens's novels, the first edition to present texts that are drawn from all the available evidence and free of the corruptions found in modern reprints. *Oliver Twist* was extensively revised; Dickens gave special care to the 1846 edition—the basis of the present text. Readings from the manuscript (of which only two-fifths survive), the serial version, and the 1838 version are given in the apparatus of variants, which exhibits Dickens's progressive revision and includes passages of unpublished dialogue between Bumble and Mrs. Corney. All of Cruikshank's plates and two of his original sketches are reproduced. *(The Clarendon Dickens.)* $12.00

English Criticism of the Novel 1865-1900

By* KENNETH GRAHAM, *University of Southampton. This is the corrected reprint of the first edition published in 1965 in the Oxford English Monographs. With this reprint the book is no longer part of the series. Dr. Graham describes the climate of critical opinion in England within which the novel grew and developed in the latter part of the nineteenth century. Drawing mainly on periodical articles and reviews, he traces the changes in the moral, intellectual, and artistic status of the novel; the conflict between realism and the various forms of non-realism; attitudes towards didacticism and the place of moral values in fiction; and the various problems of technique, including the nature of plot, character, unity, and narrative method. $3.40

Oxford University Press / New York

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Oxford University Press

The South Since Appomattox

A Century of Regional Change

By* THOMAS D. CLARK *and* ALBERT D. KIRWAN, *both of the University of Kentucky. This book, by two prominent southern historians, traces the readjustment of the American South and its realignment with the course of national history during the century since the end of the Civil War. "Written in a spirited style . . . a comprehensive, well-balanced survey of the South."—REMBERT W. PATRICK, University of Georgia.
16 pages of halftones, 2 maps. $7.50

The Lazy South

By* DAVID BERTELSON, *University of California, Berkeley. "THE LAZY SOUTH is a book of remarkable subtlety and originality. By examining in detail the attitude of colonial and ante-bellum Southerners towards the meaning and function of work, Bertelson has given us a new understanding of basic Southern social values and ideas of community. In the process, he may well have come closer to the elusive 'mind of the South' than any writer since W. J. Cash."—GEORGE M. FREDRICKSON, Northwestern University $6.75

Workshops in the Wilderness

The European Response to American Industrialization, 1830-1860

By* MARVIN FISHER, *Arizona State University. Based on diaries, accounts, reports, and informal recollections of Europeans who visited the United States, this study shows that—contrary to popular belief—American industrialization started on a significant scale in the generation before the Civil War. "A solid and well-contrived contribution to our understanding of one of the central themes in American culture."—HENRY NASH SMITH, University of California, Berkeley $6.00

Jacksonian Aristocracy

Class and Democracy in New York, 1830-1860

By* DOUGLAS T. MILLER, *Michigan State University. Professor Miller, in contradicting a popular assumption, shows how in the period of Jackson's presidency to the Civil War, while democracy advanced substantially in the political sense, social and economic distinctions became, if anything, more marked. Although the work concentrates on New York—the richest, most populous, and most influential area in the country—for its data and examples, the study is a significant commentary on the effects of economic transformation on American life. $6.00

Oxford University Press | New York

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Oxford University Press

The Sense of an Ending

Studies in the Theory of Fiction

By* FRANK KERMODE, *University of Bristol. When the author delivered the Flexner Lectures at Bryn Mawr College in 1965 they made a considerable impact on the literary world. Now those lectures are available in book form. The volume represents a pioneering attempt to relate the theory of literary fiction to a more general theory of fiction, using fictions of apocalypse as a model. Throughout the work Professor Kermode is much concerned directly or indirectly with the philosophical implications of time. He draws extensively upon such widely separated disciplines as Christian eschatology, the doctrine of death and judgment; quantum physics; and existential philosophy. $5.75

Barbarous Knowledge

Myth in the Poetry of Yeats, Graves, and Muir

By* DANIEL HOFFMAN, *University of Pennsylvania. In investigating the use made of myths and folklore by three major poets, Mr. Hoffman combines a scrupulous exposition of each poet's intellectual development with a sensitive analysis of individual poems. "Students of poetry will be excited by a presentation of Yeats, Graves, and Muir as exponents of the idea that poetry derives from myth and magic. In this context the poems quoted gain a freshness of interest."—PADRAIC COLUM $6.00

The Oxford Book of Scottish Verse

Chosen by* JOHN MACQUEEN *and* TOM SCOTT, *both of the University of Edinburgh. The editors have had two main purposes in compiling this volume. First, to lay the greater emphasis on verse written in Scots as opposed to English. Secondly, to make as full and balanced a collection as possible—balanced in the sense that they have tried to give as fair a representation to verse written before 1630 as to that which came afterwards. The attempt has been to do justice to the much neglected achievement of Scottish poetry of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, as well as to that of the eighteenth, nineteenth, and twentieth centuries. *Glossary.* $10.00

The Poems of Gerard Manley Hopkins

Edited by* W. H. GARDNER, *University of Natal, and* N. H. MACKENZIE, *Queens University, Ontario. This Fourth Edition differs from previous editions of Hopkins's verse in one significant respect: the editors have included the latest known versions of all extant poems and verse fragments. The text has been revised from a scrutiny of all the surviving autographs and contemporary transcripts, a process which has resulted in about a hundred interesting changes and several times as many minor corrections. The end product is the most definitive collection of Hopkins's poetry available. *2 line illustrations.* $7.50

Oxford University Press / New York

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

There is not the slightest indication that most of the "victims" have had anything to tell that they had not already told, and indeed the deaths seem concentrated among those who bore only the most peripheral relation to the assassination. When one stops to consider that almost each one of the "mysterious" deaths—presumably to cover up something the victim knows—requires the recruitment of at least one and often several new conspirators, it would seem that, like the pyramid club, the conspiracy would be getting bigger and bigger rather than smaller. One would think that seeing what had happened to those who knew too much, it would get very difficult to recruit new members into the conspiracy. Most important, however, it is hard to say why the supposed killers are taking whatever chances these murders entail when it is so obvious that, whoever the conspirators are, they have already gotten off scot-free.

In all probability, however, the biggest question raised by the third stage of inquiry into the assassination has nothing whatsoever to do with any of the points that have been discussed here. Rather the question is, considering their quality, why have the third-stage writings attracted the attention that they so clearly have?

To my mind it is only a partial answer to rely on the dictum of P. T. Barnum. As I see it, there are four more basic reasons. First, there really are doubts concerning the assassination of the President. This should hardly be surprising since even in a typical criminal case one cannot determine the guilt of a defendant beyond all possible doubt—this is why the jury is instructed that it need only be convinced beyond a reasonable doubt. But in the Warren Commission investigation there are other problems. Even if one concedes that Oswald was guilty beyond any reasonable doubt, there still remains a host of subsidiary questions as to just how he committed the crime and whether he had help. In the typical criminal trial these questions, of course, would often not be answered beyond a reasonable doubt. The jury might well be completely undecided as to which of three or four different means the defendant employed, and yet perfectly rationally believe that, nonetheless, he had employed one of them to commit the crime.

Uncertainty about many issues is an inevitable by-product of any large-scale investigation, and, of course, where the issue is important, there will be disputes. The evidence for the one-bullet theory is ambiguous, and, as often happens when that is true, some people assert one possibility with fervor while others disagree with equal vigor. In all probability we will never know, not only for sure, but even with a very high degree of confidence, whether the one-bullet theory is correct. If this thought is upsetting in the abstract, it is all the more so when one realizes that a completely competent investigation immediately after the assassination (and before the Warren Commission had come into being) might have given us the answer. Unfortunately, however, no one even realized that the issue was raised until after both the Zapruder films and Oswald's gun had been closely examined. By that time the autopsy on President Kennedy had been finished and his body was permanently out of the hands of the surgeons; Governor Connally's wounds were well on the way to healing; and, through an incredible bungle, the Governor's clothes had been cleaned, thus destroying any light they might have shed on the mystery.

The second reason for the great furor caused by the third-stage writings is the fact that, although the Warren Commission investigation seems on the whole a competent one, the actual *Report* of the Commission shows two grave defects. First, it was obviously rushed out. Epstein gives a most plausible explanation why, and although we can understand the Commissioners' desire to get the *Report* published before the 1964 elections, their failure to have taken the necessary time shows up again and again in the quality of the *Report*. Thus, the index to the twenty-six volumes and the citation of exhibits in the *Report* are extremely inaccurate and incomplete (making all the more valuable the comprehensive index compiled by Sylvia Meagher—and published by the

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

from Cambridge

Evolution and Society

J. W. BURROW

A study of the development of social evolutionary theory in Victorian England.

"Not until well after 1800 did anthropology emerge as a science. How it emerged and grew is told with real literary panache by John Wyon Burrow in his *Evolution and Society*. Burrow sparkles with intellectual gaiety, and his gallery of weird Victorians amuses as much as it instructs."—*Saturday Review* $8.50

Fenland Chronicle

SYBIL MARSHALL

Recollections of William Henry Edwards and Kate Mary Edwards, collected and edited by their daughter Sybil Marshall. They lived in the English fenland, an isolated section which produced strongly individual people and a distinctive way of life. Sybil Marshall is the author of *Experiment in Education*.

Fenland Chronicle is illustrated with 70 drawings by Ewart Oakeshott. $8.50

John Locke: Two Tracts on Government

PHILIP ABRAMS, Editor

The first English publication of Locke's earliest writings on politics, which were at odds with his later philosophy and which he suppressed.

The book contains the texts of these works, one in English, the other in Latin with an English translation, notes on the texts and their intellectual and political environment, and an introductory essay. $7.50

The History of the Irish Newspaper, 1685-1760

ROBERT MUNTER

Professor Munter of San Diego State College makes a detailed study of the developmental period of the Irish periodical press, with special attention to the business aspect and the relationship with political and social life.

This was a time when newspapers were produced mostly in Dublin. Their pages disclose much about trades, professions, transport, communications, and middle-class living. Illustrated. $11.50

CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS
32 East 57th Street, New York, N.Y. 10022

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Scarecrow Press—which has become the standard work for all investigations into the Commission documents), and there is a good bit of sloppiness which can be explained only by the pressures of time upon the staff. Despite the legitimate desire for speed, however, it was not necessary for the pressure to have compromised the work of the Commission. It would have made sense—considering the way in which the world awaited the *Report*—for the Commission to have put out what it did put out, or even something considerably more sketchy, as a preliminary report, just as administrative agencies often hand down tentative decisions. Then the Commission could have assembled its discussion of the evidence and its conclusions carefully and deliberately in the extra six or eight months this would have taken.

In all probability, however, another basic decision of the Commission was even more detrimental to the *Report's* ultimate value than merely the decision to get it out too quickly. This was the decision to write the *Report* not as an impartial historian but, in many places, as an advocate. When I say that the Commission too often was an advocate, I do not, of course, mean to charge it with the distortions and misrepresentations that have characterized the third stage of inquiry. What the Commission did was to put the best face on the evidence it wished to use. Thus in its discussion of the one-bullet theory the Commission marshalled most of the evidence in its favor, but alluded only slightly to the opposing evidence and not at all to the possible importance of the issue. How much better it would have been had the Commission discussed the alternatives and then decided on the one-bullet theory as the most likely of the possibilities, recognizing fully the fact that it was a likelihood, on the basis of all the evidence, somewhat on the order of four out of five rather than, as it implied, ninety-nine out of one hundred. Having done this, the Commission could have discussed how the evidence could be rationalized were the one-bullet theory not true, instead of relying on what is perhaps a technically accurate but by no means obvious truth that the validity of the one-bullet theory was "not necessary" to any of the Commission's major conclusions.

The Commission's advocacy compromised its discussion of other issues as well. It attempted to prove that Oswald's shots were not difficult ones, and concluded, on the basis of his Marine record and several not very successful tests with his rifle, that "Oswald had the capability with a rifle to commit the assassination." It would have been more candid to have pointed out that Oswald had probably just gotten off two "lucky" shots.

The Commission's advocacy is visible at yet another point. Although it had what would seem to be sufficient proof that Oswald had slain Officer Tippit, the Commission nonetheless supported its view with a purported eye-witness identification by one Helen Markham whose credibility had been badly tarnished during the hearings.

It is hard to assess the blame for the Commission's failure to accord due respect to its historical role. Perhaps it lies in the fact that the majority of the Commissioners were lawyers and that lawyers, having reached a conclusion—even honestly and fairly—are accustomed to stating it in the form that most justifies their belief and that convinces onlookers. Perhaps it is due merely to the time pressures that ruled out the longer and more careful discussion that would have been necessary had every point been given full consideration. Perhaps Epstein was partially correct, and the Commission, having decided that no conspiracy existed, tried to fulfill both its duty to its own integrity and its role as an organ of state by writing what it felt to be the truth in the most convincing form.

Whatever the reason, however, it was a serious error, and if it is responsible for even a tiny part of the third stage, the Commissioners have suffered for it.

A third problem, which quite reasonably has worried a great many observers of the controversy, is the failure of the Commission to disclose the full contents of everything before it. To be sure, although certain

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

New

THE MARK TWAIN PAPERS

The University of California Press plans to publish about fourteen volumes of Mark Twain's works. These volumes will consist mainly of previously unpublished works, but will also include material previously published in inadequate versions. On the Board of Editors appointed to coordinate the project are: Walter Blair, Donald Coney, Henry Nash Smith, and Frederick Anderson, Associate Editor.

THE FIRST THREE VOLUMES

MARK TWAIN'S LETTERS TO HIS PUBLISHERS. HAMLIN HILL, *editor.*
MARK TWAIN'S SATIRES AND BURLESQUES. FRANKLIN R. ROGERS, *editor.*
MARK TWAIN'S "WHICH WAS THE DREAM?" and Other Symbolic Writings of the Later Years. JOHN S. TUCKEY, *editor.*

EACH VOLUME **$10.00**

SHORT SENTIMENTAL JOURNEY

Italo Svevo. *Translated by* Beryl de Zote, L. Collinson-Morely, and Ben Johnson. Several of the stories in this collection, including the long title story, have been previously untranslated. Others include *The Hoax, Generous Wine, The Mother, The Nice Old Man and the Pretty Girl, Traitorously, Argo and His Master,* and *Death.* $6.00

ITALO SVEVO *The Man and the Writer*

P. N. Furbank. This pioneering work is at once a biography and a critical analysis of Svevo's major writings. "At last, and not before time, we have a book on the great neglected and misunderstood Triestino . . . likely to be our standard work on the master for many years to come."—*The Guardian* $6.00

IMPRESSIONS OF AFRICA *A Novel*

Raymond Roussel. *Translated by* Lindy Foord and Rayner Heppenstall.
Impressions d'Afrique, first published in 1910, creates a picture of an Africa wholly invented by the author, and yet representative of the true Africa. The novel is a superb, if extravagant, adventure in style and fantasy. $6.50

RAYMOND ROUSSEL

Rayner Heppenstall. This elegantly brief biography gives an absorbing portrayal of Roussel, the wealthy French dilettante and world-traveler who created a world of pure imagination in his poems and novels. Mr. Heppenstall also treats at length Roussel's writing techniques and methods of work. $4.50

MAIN TRENDS IN MODERN LINGUISTICS

Maurice LeRoy. *Translated by* Glanville Price. A survey of the main ideas in linguistics, from the Greeks and Indians to the present. Part I emphasizes the new insight into languages and the nature of language acquired by the great pioneers of the 19th century. Parts II and III deal with contemporary developments and attempts to integrate historical contributions and modern theory in a coherent structure of thought. SUMMER, 1967 $4.50

from California

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA PRESS
BERKELEY 94720

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

governmental privileges of secrecy do apply in a criminal trial, the strong presumption is in favor of complete disclosure of all admissible evidence. The Warren Commission investigation was far different, however. Unlike the criminal trial, which is generally confined by the rules of evidence to a comparatively narrow range of facts bearing upon well-defined issues, the Warren Commission conducted the broadest possible inquiry into much less well defined problems. As a result, controversy could arise over the disclosure of a great many bits of evidence that, not being usable in a criminal trial, would have created no issue as to disclosure there. Thus, reports on Oswald's behavior in the Soviet Union were at least peripherally relevant to the Commission's investigation. It is not too great a flight of fancy to believe that these reports would have revealed the names of confidential informers in the Soviet Union whose identity the C.I.A. might reasonably prefer to have uncompromised. The question, then, is where the line should have been drawn between the public's right to know and the legitimate demands of secrecy.

Furthermore, the Commission itself made no effort to determine which documents should and which should not be released to the public. Rather than make such determinations itself, the Warren Commission turned over its documents to the National Archives which, after initial confusion, asked the Department of Justice for help in determining which documents should and which should not be released. The Department of Justice, then, in consultation with the investigative agencies involved, worked out a set of general guidelines for this purpose, leaving, of course, the application of these guidelines, on a document by document basis, to the Archivists. These guidelines, as one might expect, were vague.

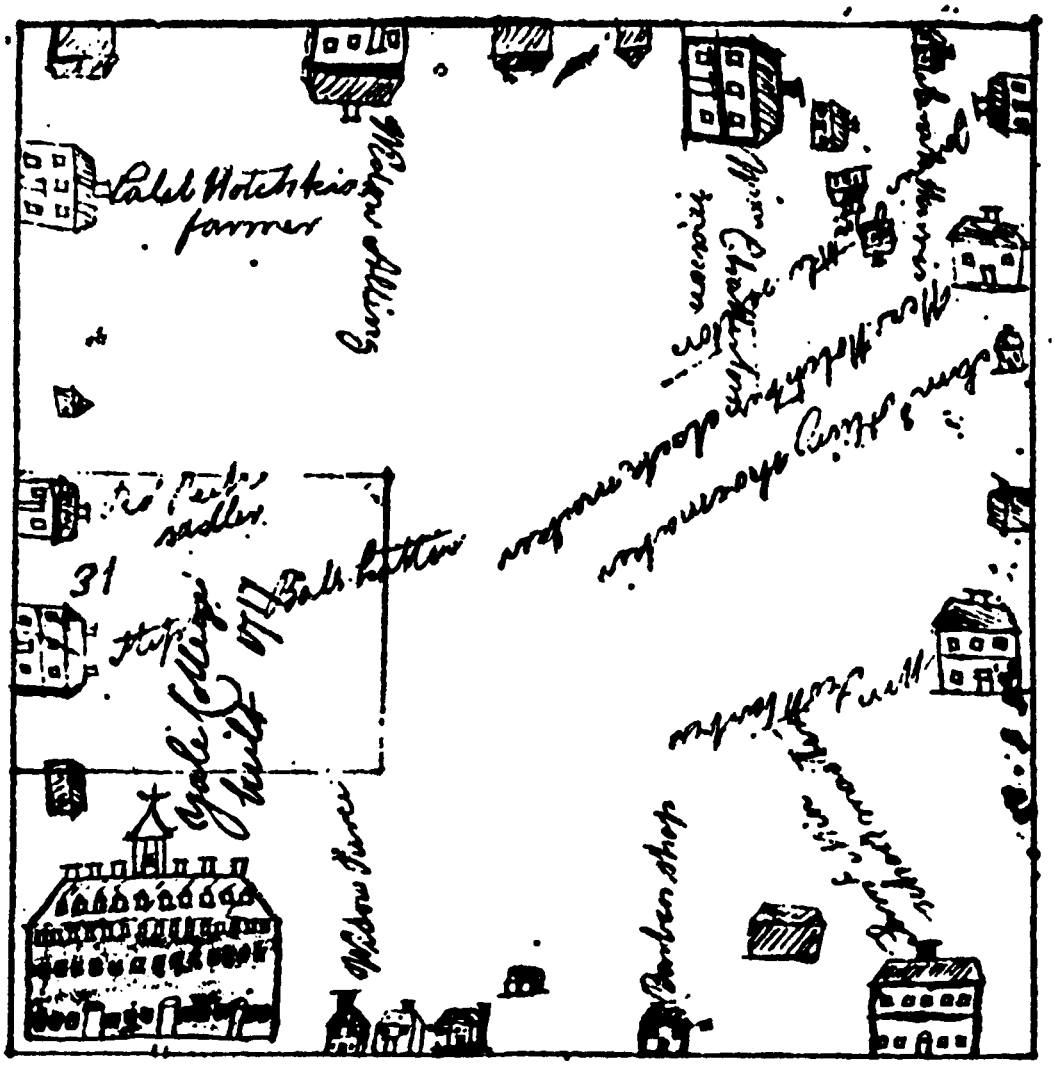
They provided that statutory and security classifications must be respected but at the same time called on the agencies involved (C.I.A., State Department, *et cetera,* which by law have control of this issue) to reevaluate the security classifications to determine whether the information could be released.

As to unclassified material, the requirements were even more vague—although it is hard to see how one could have drafted specific requirements to cover the multitude of cases. There the object was to prevent the disclosure primarily of documents "which might reveal the identity of confidential sources of information and [thereby] impede or jeopardize future investigations," or which might be a "source of embarrassment to innocent persons because they contain gossip or rumor or details of a personal nature having no significant connection with the assassination." And, although it may be argued that these directions are too inclusive, the guidelines also urged the Archives and the agencies involved to "weigh the reason [for nondisclosure] against the over-riding policy . . . favoring fullest possible disclosure." Moreover, the classifications of documents are to be reviewed after five years and then every subsequent ten years to determine what documents may then be made available.

Although the standards for releasing documents seem, at least on the surface, completely reasonable, there have been incidents that cannot help but damage the public faith in the handling of the whole issue. Before the guidelines were worked out, the Archives refused to make any documents available without the Commission's approval. Unfortunately, by that time the Commission had gone out of existence and its general counsel insisted that he therefore had no jurisdiction to approve anything. Finally, the imbroglio was solved by the Attorney General's Office, which ruled that the Archives had "the authority and obligation to review that material and to determine which of it should be made available to, or withheld from, the public . . ."

Far more important to the third-stage controversies, the X rays and photographs taken at the autopsy of President Kennedy were not initially turned over to the Archives. Apparently—although this is far from certain—they were in the possession of the Kennedy family, which, considering the matters of taste and the probable condition of the President's body, would have preferred not to release them at all. One

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED



YALE a pictorial history by Reuben A. Holden,
Secretary of the University $10.00

available at your bookstore Yale University Press New Haven and London

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

positive result of the furor is that now the exhibits—which should have been turned over much sooner—are at the Archives, and they have already been made available to the autopsy surgeons (who have announced that their earlier conclusions have thereby been confirmed). Until those exhibits are made public, however, there will be many who doubt this and feel that these photographs are being suppressed to cover the guilt of those who lied about the President's autopsy. The problem of the autopsy photographs is a relatively easy one. If taste were the only reason for not releasing a document, it would be quite clear that all should be made public. Unfortunately, we are in the situation where there are overriding reasons for not releasing some of the documents, but it is equally clear that so long as there exists any evidence that has not been made public, many Americans (especially those who draw no distinction between different organs of government such as the Warren Commission and the National Archives) will view this as powerful evidence of a conspiracy to suppress the truth.

It is obvious, however, that the previously mentioned reasons by no means fully account for the violence and the number of attacks upon the Warren Commission and its investigation. The question then is what does, and although the evidence on this is hardly conclusive, there are several indications. The first and most obvious is that the great body of complaint about the Commission has come from the left. Despite the fact that, from what we know of Oswald, a leftist conspiracy—if there was a political conspiracy at all—is far more likely than a rightist one, almost all the conspiracy allegations have been directed from the left at the right. Men who deplored McCarthyism and all it stood for have been perfectly willing on the basis of incredibly flimsy evidence or no evidence at all to posit theories that Patrolman Tippit was a conspirator in the President's assassination; that the Commissioners lied and suppressed the truth; that a whole host of government officials perjured themselves; and indeed that a network of conspirators far surpassing anything charged during the "Who Promoted Peress?" days now pervades the nation. Even the most baleful excesses of the McCarthy era were not as unfair, irresponsible and reckless as this.

As to what is causing this, one cannot, of course, know for sure. I would suggest, however, that one basic reason has escaped attention: Vietnam. Hatred is not a pretty thing, and the hatred that the extreme left has developed for Lyndon Johnson, although it probably matches that which the right wing had for Franklin D. Roosevelt, is something that is unparalleled in our time. In this context the attacks on the Warren Commission serve the function of blaming one more thing on Lyndon Johnson. After all, the Commission was a governmental body and Johnson not only heads the government, he set up and chose the Commission as well. Thus the widespread feeling that on the Vietnam issue the government has forfeited the citizen's confidence in its integrity need only be extended somewhat to conclude that the Commissioners have merely been loyal to the President in suppressing the truth.

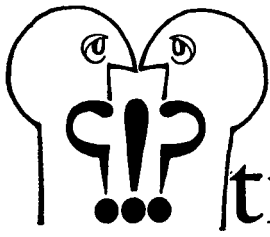
Furthermore, in the background there is an even less pretty thought—indeed one which is very rarely mentioned, at least directly. Popkin slyly refers to those who see the assassination as "a subtle conspiracy involving perhaps some of the Dallas police, the FBI, the right-wing lunatic fringe in Dallas or perhaps even (in rumors I have often heard) Kennedy's successor."

The *Movement*, the newspaper of the Student Non-Violent Coordinating Committee, said in its November 1966 issue:

> Several commentators have remarked that the assassination must have been the act of one demented killer because it was not followed by a right-wing takeover. This explanation overlooks the fact that, in some policy areas, Johnson's accession to the presidency constituted a right-wing takeover.

Although it is hardly clear in print, it should be clear for a host of reasons that there are a sizable number of people in the United States who would wish nothing more than to be able, somehow, to pin the blame for

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED



troublemakers?

Beacon Press proudly concedes that seven of its new spring books will make *constructive* trouble in many quarters — by combining impressive scholarship and good writing to incite readers to think, speak and act. Thus we submit:

VIETNAM: THE LOGIC OF WITHDRAWAL
By Howard Zinn
Publication date March 10 **$4.95**
A studied rebuke of America's Vietnam involvement and our unconvincing official rationalizations thereof, with constructive disengagement recommendations.

STRATEGY FOR LABOR
A Radical Proposal
By Andre Gorz
Publication date April 28 **$5.95**
Must labor (and society) choose between revolution and frustrating gradualism in seeking better ways of living and working? Gorz argues brilliantly for a constructive marriage of the two strategies.

SEX INCORPORATED
A Positive View of the Sexual Revolution
By Hans Hofmann
Publication date May 5 **$4.95**
For adults and mature teenagers, a constructive appraisal of the role of sex as an indicator of and contributor to personal growth and fulfillment.

THE POLITICS OF GOD
By Joseph R. Washington, Jr.
Publication date April 28 **$5.95**
The provocative author of *Black Religion* will incite both theological and social debate with this disturbing challenge to Negroes to seek constructive *change* (rather than mere membership) in white Christianity.

IN FAMINE'S SHADOW
A Private War on Poverty
By Mervyn Jones
Publication date March 10 **$4.95**
How a small private organization (Oxfam) pioneers constructive bridgeheads for the larger public efforts to eliminate mass starvation.

VILLAGE SCHOOL DOWNTOWN
Politics and Education: A Boston Report
By Peter Schrag
Publication date April 28 **$5.95**
This solid, lively report on big-city educational obsolescence by the author of *Voices in the Classroom* is packed with constructive insight into one of the nation's most depressing domestic problems.

THE FOURTH R
A Return to Learning for Sidetracked Adolescents
By Robert B. Heinemann and Marilyn Bernstein
Publication date May 12 **$6.00**
Do classroom freedom and frankness lead to explosion or effective education for teenagers who've *chosen to fail?* A constructive attack on pedagogical rigidity by two experienced teachers.

Yet Beacon's 113 years of publishing have also engendered an untroubled respect for quiet reflection and good-humored retrospection. In this vein we offer:

WITH BRASS AND GAS
An Illustrated and Embellished Chronicle of Ballooning in Mid-Nineteenth Century America.
By Munson Baldwin
Publication date May 5 **$6.00**
A tragi-comic portrait of America's original aeronauts, and the raw innocence of a society which neither understood nor humored them.

THE MINUTE PARTICULAR
By E. G. Lee
Publication date January 20 **$4.95**
The poignant autobiography of an English clergyman-editor whose quest for personal faith leads the reader through an inspiring pilgrimage.

BOSTON WAYS: HIGH, BY, AND FOLK
Revised 1967 Edition
By George F. Weston, Jr.
Publication date February 10 **$5.95**
Adding the "New Boston" to an already widely-acclaimed "wanderer's guide" to one of America's most colorful cities. Many new photographs.

A complete, annotated subject guide to all Beacon books in print (arranged according to Dewey Decimal categories) is available without cost from:

BEACON PRESS 25 Beacon St. Boston, Mass. 02108

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

President Kennedy's assassination on his successor, Lyndon Johnson. For them this would be a solution to the Vietnam involvement; a method of avenging the death of one who after his death (although by no means before it) became something of a hero to them; and finally a means of punishing the President for his transgressions.

To remark that these sentiments are unworthy, and that these tactics can only do harm in the long run to the values those who use such methods purport to support, is beside the point. The fact is that they have in some measure been successful. We have already entered the fourth stage where the nation's opinion-makers are belatedly entering the picture.

The fourth stage, when, for the first time, the organized mass media began paying serious attention to the outcries over the Warren Commission *Report,* can be said to have begun during the week of November 25, 1966. In the same week both *Life* Magazine and the New York *Times* demanded that something be done.

Life, which owns the original of the Zapruder film, reproduced in blown-up color the crucial section, covering the period when the one bullet—or the two bullets—struck President Kennedy and Governor Connally, and entitled its feature story, "A Matter of Reasonable Doubt." Although *Life* did not purport to draw any conclusions as to the validity of the one-bullet theory, the text included both some of the arguments in its favor, as set out by the Commission's former staff member, Arlen Specter, now District Attorney of Philadelphia, and a rebuttal by the *Life* staff. Certainly the piece leaves the average reader with the feeling that the one-bullet theory is the less likely of the possibilities. There are, however, several things to note about *Life*'s story and pictures. First, as *Life* points out, President Kennedy can easily be seen reacting before any reaction by Governor Connally is visible—almost exactly half a second earlier according to the Governor himself. Interestingly, however, the frame the Governor chose as the one in which he was struck, Frame 234, shows him very clearly holding his hand up and completely out of the path the Commission stated the bullet must have followed to strike him on the right wrist. *Life* explains this way:

> Nor can much importance be given to lining up Connally's three wounds—Specter's alignment of holes theory. Having hit a rib would probably have deflected the bullet from a straight course; Connally's wrist could have been almost anywhere and still have been struck by it.

Life may indeed be correct, but it is interesting to note that its staff missed a most relevant question and answer between Specter and Dr. Shaw, who operated on Governor Connally at the Parkland Hospital.

> Specter: "Would the shattering of the rib have had any effect deflecting the path of the bullet in a straight line?"
> Dr. Shaw: "It could have had except in the case of this injury the rib was obviously struck so that not too dense a cancellus portion was carried away by the bullet and probably there was very little in the way of deflection."

In addition, the pictures reproduced by *Life* support the one-bullet theory in another way. If the "alignment of holes theory" is incorrect and the Governor was hit in Frame 234, the bullet that struck the Governor would not only have had to be deflected up to his wrist but back down to his thigh as well. Taken together with the other evidence, the pictures published by *Life* make it perhaps somewhat more likely that, despite his firm belief to the contrary, Governor Connally was struck before he lifted the hand visible in Frame 234 and that his reaction was delayed half a second longer than President Kennedy's. (Anyone who has seen military combat can repeat instances where reactions to or knowledge of wounds have been delayed considerably longer than this period.)

The New York *Times* also contributed relatively little in the way of enlightenment. It quoted one S. M. Holland, a railroad supervisor: "There definitely was a shot from behind that fence" (near the grassy knoll). Mr. Holland's interview with the Warren Commission, however, cast some light on his present views.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

NORTON "Books that Live"

Distinguished new books for Spring

EDITH HAMILTON
An Intimate Portrait

By DORIS FIELDING REID. An absorbing biography, by an intimate friend, of the extraordinary schoolmistress who achieved international fame as the author of *The Greek Way* and other books that became classics in her lifetime. With 12 pages of photographs. $5.00

EISENHOWER AND BERLIN, 1945
The Decision to Halt at the Elbe

By STEPHEN E. AMBROSE. This provocative book sheds new and fascinating light on the reasons why the Allies did not undertake to beat the Russians to Berlin. The author is Associate Professor of History at Johns Hopkins University and Associate Editor of the Eisenhower Papers. With maps. $4.00

SONGS FOR A SON

By ROBERT L. PETERS. The author writes of these poems: "I have tried to treat an anguishing personal experience without sentimentality and with enough sense of the universal to comfort readers and hearers who have undergone their own bereavement."
$4.50 cloth; $1.95 paper

SOME VERSIONS OF SILENCE

By ROBERT DANA. "These are poems of the inner life, or transformations effected in silence, a silence in which, note by note, a flute begins to play. They are introspective without being abstract." — DENISE LEVERTOV.
$4.50 cloth; $1.95 paper

THE ORIGIN OF PHILOSOPHY

By JOSE ORTEGA Y GASSET. An important work, dealing with the basic problems of philosophy, by the author of *The Revolt of the Masses* and many other books. Albert Camus said of him that he was "after Nietzsche, perhaps the greatest European writer." $4.00

AN ESSAY ON CRITICISM

By GRAHAM HOUGH. The author of *The Dream and the Task* and *The Romantic Poets* undertakes to examine and isolate the basic principles of literary criticism. The result is a lucid and concise study of a subject of legendary intricacy. $4.50

At all bookstores

W. W. NORTON & COMPANY, INC.
New York, N. Y. 10003

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

"You had no idea, I take it, that the shots were coming from your area." [Holland was standing on the overpass by the knoll.]

Holland: "No."

"It is your impression that they did not, could not, as far as the sound was concerned."

Holland: "As far as the sound was concerned, they did not."

Moreover, Mr. Holland stated in answer to the usual final question:

"Anything else occurred to you?"

Holland: "No, that is about all of it. If I have been of any help, I'm tickled."

And finally, Mr. Holland, who had attended the Commission's proceedings with a lawyer, was given and accepted the opportunity of reading over his full statement as transcribed by the stenographers before signing it as a true and correct copy.

The *Times* also quoted Malcolm Kilduff, former acting press secretary to President Kennedy, to the effect that the one-bullet theory could not possibly be true because "Governor Connally still has a piece of the bullet in his leg." Unfortunately, Mr. Kilduff was not specific about the size of the fragment in the Governor's leg. Governor Connally's doctor, Dr. Shires, however, testified before the Commission that indeed there was a remnant of the bullet in Governor Connally's leg but that its weight was "in grains—a fraction of a grain, maybe a tenth of a grain—very small." When one considers that there are 437.5 grains in an ounce and that the type of bullet used in the assassination weighed about 161 grains, it is hard to refute the one-bullet theory with a one-tenth of a grain fragment.

Far more important than the new light *Life* and the New York *Times* have shed on the issues has been their call to action. *Life* concluded its article:

The national interest deserves clear resolution of the doubts. A new investigating body should be set up, perhaps at the initiative of Congress. In a scrupulously objective and unhurried atmosphere, without the pressure to give reassurance to a shocked country, it should re-examine the evidence and consider other evidence the Warren Commission failed to evaluate.

The *Times* in its editorial was less specific; it merely called on the members of the Commission and its staff to give "clarification and answers to unanswered questions." The *Times* asserted that the Commission's purpose "is being eroded a little at a time by the clamor," and that "merely more denials by the Commission or its staff are no longer enough."

By now it is clear that something will have to be done. But what?

Probably the most obvious measure would be to release the autopsy photographs and X rays of President Kennedy. Certainly this should be done, but the trouble is that it will accomplish very little. The fact is that there is really no doubt as to what those pictures will show. The evidence, entirely apart from the photographs, that the autopsy surgeons were correct is overwhelming. Of course, the photographs should be examined but if indeed the surgeons were not correct, it is hard to see how they—after examining the photographs only very recently—could still have retained their bravado in the face of imminent exposure.

More important, however, is the fact that this is not where the real controversy lies. Even though we might wish that the autopsy on President Kennedy had been done by more experienced forensic pathologists—a fact that can hardly be blamed on the Commission since the choice of the Bethesda Naval Hospital for the autopsy was made by the late President's wife before the Commission came into existence—the one-bullet theory will almost certainly not be disproved or even made less likely by anything we may now learn about President Kennedy's wounds. If the nature of wounds is to be investigated, Governor Connally's wounds are far more significant on the issue and they are all healed.

This is not to say that a careful congressional investigation, choosing consultants who are experts in their field, could not in the first instance put together a report better than that of the Warren Commission. This, however, is now beside the point.

More important today a congressional committee could and should call a host of

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Books from Ohio State

Travels in the Southland, 1822-1823

The Journal of Lucius Verus Bierce

Edited by George W. Knepper

A day-by-day record of the observations and experiences of a young Ohioan during a one-year walking tour of the South of his time, which reports vividly the reactions to manners and mores, quite different from his own and those of his New England heritage, of a man who later played a colorful and significant role in the old Western Reserve and the burgeoning canal town of Akron. $4.50

Some British Romantics

A Collection of Essays

Edited by James V. Logan, John E. Jordan, and Northrop Frye

The fourth book of a series on British Romanticism sponsored by the Committee on Research Projects of that group of the Modern Language Association concerned with early nineteenth-century British writers. The distinguished contributors—Northrop Frye, Vivian Mercier, Geoffrey Tillotson, Stephen F. Fogle, Douglas Grant, Kathleen Coburn, Ian Jack, John Henry Raleigh, Karl Kroeber, and William S. Ward—present essays on such writers as William Blake, Charles Lamb, John Clare, Sir Walter Scott, and others. $6.00

The Shorter Poems of Ralph Knevet

A Critical Edition

By Amy M. Charles

The literary trends of any period are often more readily discernible in the works of its minor writers than in those that are surrounded by the dazzling (and therefore deceptive) aura of its acknowledged masters. Knevet's works presented in this critical edition—the three published during his lifetime, *Stratiotikon, Rhodon and Iris,* and *Funerall Elegies,* and a manuscript collection of poems entitled *A Gallery to the Temple,* now published here—reflect not only the influence of Elizabethan verse in the seventeenth century but a microcosm of Caroline poetry as well. $9.00

Ohio State University Press
164 West Nineteenth Avenue
Columbus, Ohio 43210

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

witnesses who could tighten up a good many loose ends in the investigation. Some witnesses could be called to quiet doubts that already can be seen to be perverse. Others could be called to testify at length on issues where the Commission assumed more knowledge than perhaps many laymen have—such as the fact that high speed rifle bullets do not tumble in unobstructed flight. Yet others could be called to examine with greater care the theories of the third stage—some of which the Commission could not have anticipated. But to move from the gathering of more evidence—which after all is what will be examined by future generations of historians—to a group that would repeat anew the decision process is a great—and unwise—step indeed. To say as *Life* does that the new investigators should "consider other evidence which the Warren Commission failed to evaluate" is somewhat unfair. Although the Commission's report does not make this clear at all, there may well be no evidence that the Commission failed to consider. From all sorts of clues one can convince himself that the Commission evaluated far more evidence than appears at first glance. Certainly it should have made this more apparent, but the call for a formal reevaluation is a call for someone either to disagree with the Commission or to agree with it—and in either case there are a host of problems raised.

For instance, any new commission would have to decide whether to recall the witnesses. If it did not, it could not observe their demeanor—something lawyers regard as extremely important in passing upon credibility. And if it did call the witnesses afresh, time would have so dimmed their memory that, compared with the initial hearings, any second hearing would be more likely to misinform than to inform.

Furthermore, if such a commission is to second-guess the Warren Commission, it presumably would have to be composed of members whose prestige, balance, and reputation for integrity transcended that of the members of the Warren Commission. After U Thant, the Pope and perhaps Arnold Toynbee, however, one has great trouble selecting mortals for this task. Moreover, the fact is that now the trail has gone cold. It is almost inconceivable that any new evidence will be turned up on the one-bullet problem, or for that matter on any other important issue in the case.

Finally, even if a whole new report and new evidence were produced by a new commission, one should ask whether this would quiet the critics of the third stage. My guess is that it would not, and for every point upon which one of those critics was satisfied, there would be others that would place issues—and the integrity of the investigators—more in doubt. The fact is that there is no amount of evidence that cannot be explained if one is willing to envision a conspiracy big enough, and the mine of stories that have been given currency and swallowed until now is a good indication that this conspiracy can be extended as far as necessary. It is sad to acknowledge one more indication that political paranoia is not a monopoly of the far right.

Even apart from this, the hard fact is that the full truth about the assassination—in the sense that there is an objective and verifiable truth—will never be known. Partly this is due to the death of Oswald himself—although if he had remained alive it would certainly have been to his interest to stave off execution by constantly hinting that he knew more than he had told. More to the point, the past may be as unknowable as the future. One may guess at what has already happened with greater and lesser degrees of accuracy, just as one may predict the future with greater and lesser degrees of accuracy. But in many of a nation's affairs, as in many of an individual's, truth can never be known, and even the important questions cannot be settled one way or another beyond a reasonable doubt. This is in many ways a most upsetting statement, and obviously the American people are upset about this issue. In one sense they have every right to be upset. But it is a sign of maturity to recognize that even the most important of issues often cannot be resolved to a certainty.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

RUTGERS UNIVERSITY PRESS

THE DARK AGES

Jews in Christian Europe, 711-1096

Edited by Cecil Roth

The second volume to appear in the projected 20-volume series, "The World History of the Jewish People," is Vol. XI. It covers in authoritative detail a phenomenon of enormous historical significance—the westward migration of the Jews from the Middle East to the lands of the West in the years after 700 A.D., a movement that marked the real beginning of modern European Jewish history. *492 pages, 60 illus., 9 maps, notes, bibliog., index* $17.50

THE HUMAN DIMENSION

Experiences in Policy Research

by Hadley Cantril

author of *The Pattern of Human Concerns*

An account of the author's attempts over many years to inject the consideration of psychological factors in the making of crucial government decisions. A social psychologist, Mr. Cantril describes his rapid sampling methods as well as his more extended polls and shows how they can be used to inform the public and to predict reactions in this country and abroad. If full use had been made of the polls conducted in 1960 in Cuba, the United States might have avoided our catastrophe there; the polls taken in 1962 in Santo Domingo might have prevented the violence of 1965. A major book, modest in its presentation, but overwhelming in its implications. *234 pages, 9 charts, notes, index* $7.50

RUTGERS UNIVERSITY PRESS • New Brunswick, New Jersey

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The Revolving Bookstand . . . . . .

The Freudian Hawthorne

THE SINS OF THE FATHERS: Hawthorne's Psychological Themes. *By Frederick C. Crews. Oxford University Press. $6.75.*

Reviewed by HENRY A. MURRAY

Although always a fastidious stylist, Hawthorne was not always writing in the service of the same self. In his house of mind dwelt several kindred yet distinctive selves, some consonant and some dissonant, some on the front side bathed in an "Indian-summer sunlight," as Melville discerned in 1850, and some residing in the rear or in the cellar, shrouded in blackness, "ten-times black." Corresponding to this most striking division in his nature, Hawthorne has had from the beginning both his chiefly light-siding and his chiefly dark-siding appreciative readers.

The thesis of the light-siders, as Evert Duyckinck, the Episcopalian, succinctly stated it in 1841, has been that Hawthorne is most worthy of our homage as a preacher of "lay sermons, full of hope and tranquility." Submerged for a while, this thesis has been recently revived and ethereally inflated by a claque of sanguine critics who seem bent on pushing forward the backward-looking romancer and allegorist as a sustaining buoy of Christian grace and inspiration for the hapless many who are floundering in today's sea of dissolving moral values. In addition to all this, we have lately been presented with at least three extensive biographical exhibits of the correlative and reinforcing thesis, the substance of which, in briefest terms, is that the self-insulated, "shyest grape" of Salem, Massachusetts, was healthily and actively in touch and tune with his social and cultural environment.

Here is a coupling of cheerful propositions, to be sure, but do they veritably float? Is their combined buoyancy sufficient to detach the author of "The Haunted Mind" from the "tomb" and "dungeon" (as he called them) over which he hovered for so long, and turn his "real Me" into a pious, gladdening lover of mankind? And what will be the buoyancy of this coupling, its life expectancy, after suffering the rapier thrusts of deflating facts and mockery that serve as an impediment-clearing prelude to this present work by the knowledgeable and incisive, dark-siding professor of English at Berkeley, California?

In this finely wrought and finely written book one finds, systematically and forcefully expounded by Professor Crews, the latest, most drastic and explicit version of the dark-siders' antithetical proposition. First of all, in line with a long procession of readers ranging from Melville to Professor H. H. Waggoner, this version states that the eminence of Hawthorne rests upon the various, enticing, subtle, ironic, cunning, symbolic, thematic and sometimes candid and outspoken ways in which this gifted writer reveals to intuitive receptors how very far and with what unprecedented cullings he pursued his avowed intention of "burrowing, to his utmost ability, into the depths of our common human nature, for the purposes of psychological romance." Crucial to this thesis is the generally acknowledged fact that Hawthorne's persistent burrowings carried him, quite early in his career, through the black veil of puritan defenses and into the underlying world of enormities and guilt, a region of

HENRY A. MURRAY is professor emeritus of clinical psychology at Harvard University and a former director of the Harvard Psychology Clinic. He is a member of the Editorial Board of the SCHOLAR.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

from MINNESOTA

T. S. Eliot: Moments and Patterns

by Leonard Unger

A cohesive and illuminating view of Eliot's work, provided through a collection of essays written over the last thirty years. $5.75

Man's Changing Mask: Modes and Methods of Characterization in Fiction

by Charles Child Walcutt

A close analysis of works ranging from *Hamlet* to modern fiction, demonstrating a bold new approach to criticism. $6.75

The Reconstruction of Georgia

by Alan Conway

A revisionist reappraisal of Georgia's history following the Civil War, the first substantial history of the period published in fifty years. $6.50

All Things Common: The Hutterian Way of Life

by Victor Peters

"An excellent study of the history, the organization, and the external relations of a strange and therefore interesting human society." H. R. Trevor-Roper, *New York Review of Books*. Illustrated. $5.75

The Market-Planned Economy of Yugoslavia

by Svetozar Pejovich

An analysis of Yugoslavia's economic system as it affects both the overall economy and the individual firm. $5.75

Law and the Social Sciences in the Second Half Century

by Julius Stone

A discussion of the relationship of law and the social sciences to the solution of social problems. $4.50

Prose Styles: Five Primary Types

by Huntington Brown

An identification and discussion of prose styles which have been conspicuous in Western culture since remote times. $4.50

The American Student's Freedom of Expression: A Research Appraisal

by E. G. Williamson and John L. Cowan

A study of attitudes and policies at more than 800 colleges and universities. $5.50

At your bookseller or from

the university of minnesota press

2037 University Avenue Southeast, Minneapolis, Minnesota 55455
In Canada: The Copp Clark Publishing Co., Ltd., Toronto

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

his own mind as well as of the minds of certain others, that he preempted for voyeuristic explorations in search of hidden motives, of depraved imaginations and unpardonable sins—evils to be exposed to shame and censure. It is from Hawthorne's absorption in this macabre and ghostly region of experience that his unique drawing power, his black magic, his witchcraft, is primarily derived. In league with this view of the master craftsman as a psychologist of extraordinary depth is the conviction (which Professor Crews shares with a number of earlier biographers and critics) that Hawthorne suffered more or less from some sort of obsessional neurosis: he must first have been the victim and only later the acute detector—if not the independent discoverer—of fateful, involuntary and unconscious mental processes.

In this polemical book, Professor Crews's chosen sphere of concern does not embrace the aims of a biographer or the full range of functions of a comprehensive, evenhanded literary critic. Having an exacting job to do, a particular axe to grind, he has neither the space nor the inclination to do justice to those more playful, elfish, affectionate, or remarkably objective selves on the healthy side of Hawthorne's household; and he cuts through the "lay sermons" in accord with D. H. Lawrence's original apperception of them as little more than the "smarm" (the decorous genteel sentiments and conventional goody-goody moralizings) with which the "blue-eyed darling" candy-coated the otherwise-too-shocking diabolisms of his shadow self. As Professor Crews properly points out (with two phrases culled from *The Scarlet Letter*): "In the typical Hawthorne tale there is a jarring dissonance between the 'sweet moral blossom' that is served up with an obliging flourish and the 'human frailty and sorrow' that compose the story." The light-siders' misapprehensions are largely attributed to the prevailing "duplicity" (Lawrence again) of this author, a man whose verve and nerve were nearly always below par.

Professor Crews's line of intentionality is composed of two major strands, the more continuous of which from start to finish is that of subjecting products of Hawthorne's imagination (many of his stories and all of his novels in a roughly chronological order) to a thorough psychoanalytic treatment—minute scrutiny and penetrating depth interpretations—and by this method sooner or later to arrive at the underlying generative source not only of the majority of his themes but of his more intractable obsessions. In the advancement of this endeavor Professor Crews—a doctor of letters, not of medicine—manifests remarkable professional vigilance, perceptiveness, learning and ingenuity, especially in bringing to bear whatever pertinent resources orthodox Freudian theory and practice have to offer. Here is a son in whom the father of psychoanalysis would assuredly be well pleased. Professor Crews's second strand of intentionality, which is less zealously and systematically pursued, is that of estimating, so far as possible, to what extent his author on the couch was conscious of the nature and significance of the various involuntary processes—say, repression, displacement, reaction formation, return of the repressed—and of the targets of the various instinctive dispositions—say, sexual, voyeuristic, punitive and sadistic—that are recurrently exhibited, clearly or obscurely, in his symbolic and allegorical romances. More specifically, Professor Crews is out to show—and he does show with numerous telling illustrations—on what grounds Hawthorne deserves to be prized and honored as perhaps the earliest unmistakable forerunner in the field of literature of Dr. Sigmund Freud, a genius whom he resembled in several notable respects.

During the course of his proficient and precise dissections of his analysand's imaginations, Professor Crews goes further than any of his literary predecessors in exposing the subtler dynamics, the latent content, of the thematic substance of a number of selected stories, especially, let me say, of "Alice Doane's Appeal" and of "Roger Malvin's Burial." But despite

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

DOUBLEDAY ANCHOR BOOKS

THE FIRST NAME IN QUALITY PAPERBACK PUBLISHING

BRATSK STATION AND OTHER NEW POEMS

Yevgeny Yevtushenko

Introduction by Rosh Ireland. Translated by Tina Tupikina-Glaessner, Geoffrey Dutton, and Igor Mezhakoff-Koriakin. The first publication in America of the translation approved by Yevtushenko of his epic cycle on the building of a hydroelectric station in Siberia. In the 26 other poems collected here, he writes of his faith in the ideals of the Revolution and of the often troubled relations between the artist and government. *An Anchor Original.* $1.25

WHERE IS VIETNAM?

American Poets Respond

Edited by Walter Lowenfels

A strong and stunning anthology of recent work that gathers together for the first time a wide spectrum of response to the Vietnam experience from 87 American poets. Included are poems by Bly, Dickey, Ferlinghetti, Ginsberg, Kunitz, Levertov, and Lowell, as well as the work of young campus poets and the best poems from the Vietnam Read-ins. An unforgettable and controversial collection of historic significance. *An Anchor Original.* $1.25

PROFESSION OF ENGLISH

G. B. Harrison

A wise and witty introduction to English literature as a profession — and as an art. Touching on such subjects as the censorship of children's reading, the Ph.D. marathon, and the strategy for faculty promotion, Professor Harrison has written "a thoroughly brilliant book . . . (which) should be read by anyone . . . teaching English or any other subject."—*Library Journal.* 95¢

THE COLLECTIVE FAMILY

A Handbook for Russian Parents

A. S. Makarenko; Introduction by Urie Bronfenbrenner

If the most widely read books in a society provide a key to the character of that society, then this volume — a practical guide to child-rearing which has been the Russian "Dr. Spock" since 1937 — should be a major source for understanding the U.S.S.R. *An Anchor Original.* $1.45

REALITIES OF THE URBAN CLASSROOM

Observations in Elementary Schools

G. Alexander Moore, Jr.

Based upon case histories of classroom situations which the urban teacher must face, this study analyzes the problems arising from inadequate teacher-understanding of students from low-income, ethnically varied backgrounds. *An Anchor Original.* 95¢

DOUBLEDAY & COMPANY, INC.

Garden City, New York

Our Laidlaw division, River Forest, Illinois,
serves the textbook needs of today's schools.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

all the clearheaded professor's brilliant intuitions, despite the seductiveness of his ordered reasonings, this empathic reader must confess that he was chilled, almost to the marrow, by the sense and then the certainty that he was being guided in story after story—sometimes by very questionable hunches—to the same commonplace conclusion: the conclusion that in the last analysis nearly all of the rich symbolic stuff in Hawthorne is explainable in terms of an unresolved Oedipus complex—that genetically-given catchall to which orthodoxy relegates by fiat the whole enormous population of neurotics. The surmise that the terminus of each elegant dissection, as well as the finale of the whole inquiry, was preordained from the beginning by the analyst's overconfident attachment to this single formula is supported by the demonstrable fact that Professor Crews has overlooked so much—so much that stems from a reversal of mother love, so much that is more prevalent and potent than parricide, so much, in short, that is essential to any complex "figure in the carpet," that could deservedly be accepted as Hawthorne's distinctive signature.

But this is not the place to debate the professional question of how many Hawthornian themes can stand on the head of an Oedipus complex; and since it would take a thick document to defend a quite different representation of the figure in Hawthorne's carpet of creations, I must cleave mutely to the hope that Professor Crews, with his fertile imagination no longer confined to an old rut, will someday reexamine both the critically important stories and the pertinent biographical facts that are not included in *this* book, and, after reweighing whatever reckless utterances he has permitted himself here, will write a *second* book, in celebration this time not so much of the authority of Freud as of the genius of Hawthorne. For, even as a psychologist, Hawthorne surpassed the great explorer in a few insightful ways, one of which was to perceive and to acknowledge the mutilating and deforming effects of (sadistically tinged) dissections of another person's character: for instance,

> if we take the freedom to put a friend under our microscope, we thereby insulate him from many of his true relations, magnify his peculiarities, inevitably tear him into parts, and, of course, patch him very clumsily together again. What wonder, then, should we be frightened by the aspect of a monster, which, after all . . . may be said to have been created mainly by ourselves.

A Book To Be Cherished

MODERN AMERICAN USAGE. *By Wilson Follett. Hill and Wang. $7.50.*

Reviewed by A. M. TIBBETTS

The National Council of Teachers of English held one of its huge meetings in Houston recently. After one series of speeches on grammar and usage, a college teacher in the audience arose and stated: "The new Follett is a vicious book." The speakers had not mentioned Follett; the only reference to the book was the program chairman's idle remark that he had been reading it a few days earlier.

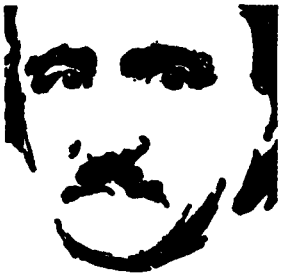
That so decorous a book on English usage should call forth bitterness in a professional meeting is not surprising to anyone who has been in the middle of the Great Linguistic War of the last ten years. The War has spread beyond professordom, and tempers are frayed. Drop a single word or name—like *purist, linguist, Fowler, Barzun, Follett*—into a quiet area behind the lines and suddenly soldiers appear, gnashing their teeth. Follett's *Modern American Usage* was published at the wrong (or right) time, when the warriors on both sides were just recovering from deep wounds inflicted in the big fight over Webster's *Third.* Follett, judging from the reviews already published, is the new battleground on a smaller scale. One is already expected to be for or against the book. If one takes any middle ground, he

A. M. TIBBETTS teaches rhetoric and literature at the University of Illinois.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

WALLACE STEVENS
Art of Uncertainty
HERBERT J. STERN

Somewhere near the center of Wallace Stevens' poetic vision are delight—the hedonist's delight in thoughts, feelings, sounds, and colors—and the poet's ambition to make this delight accessible. This book examines Stevens' poems of the *Harmonium* period—with a special eye to the hazards risked by a modern American artist who takes delight seriously. *$5.95*



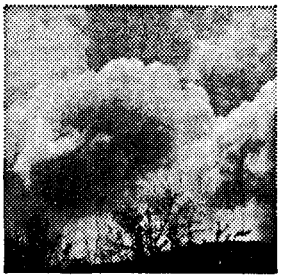
The Recognition of
EDGAR ALLAN POE
ERIC W. CARLSON, Editor

For more than a century Edgar Allan Poe has been a controversial figure in world literature. Here Rufus Griswold, T. S. Eliot, Charles Baudelaire, Allen Tate, and others—in more than thirty articles, essays, poems, and reviews—trace the development of Poe's reputation as poet, critic, and storyteller. *$7.50*

THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN PRESS
ANN ARBOR

Transcendentalism and Its Legacy
MYRON SIMON & THORNTON PARSONS, Editors

New England transcendentalism rewards reexamination. Some of the challenging critical minds of our time explore aspects of this philosophical and literary movement. Essays are by Kenneth Burke, Emerson Marks, Glauco Cambon, Harry Hayden Clark, Albert Gilman and Roger Brown, René Wellek, Frederic I. Carpenter, Herbert W. Schneider, Sherman Paul, Joe Lee Davis. *$6.95*



George Chapman

A CRITICAL STUDY

Millar MacLure

This first full-length study in English of the works of George Chapman discusses in absorbing detail all his plays, poems, and translations in relation to their genres and in terms of Chapman's intellectual and aesthetic development. In tracing the relationship between Chapman's art and his aesthetic, moral, and intellectual notions, Professor MacLure has made a valuable contribution to the study of Renaissance thought and literature. $6.50

University of Toronto Press
Toronto 5, Canada

Books for the United States shipped from our Brooklyn warehouse

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

A NEW SERIES from FAWCETT PREMIER

LITERATURE AND IDEAS SERIES:
Irving Howe, General Editor

These comprehensive and authoritative collections of significant works by distinguished scholars and writers provide invaluable background and critical material for students and teachers of literature.

THE ELIZABETHAN AGE—Edited with an Introduction by David L. Stevenson—m331, 95¢

MODERNS ON TRAGEDY—Edited with an Introduction by Lionel Abel—m330, 95¢

THE PROBLEM OF STYLE—Edited with an Introduction by J. V. Cunningham—m319, 95¢

REALITY AND MYTH IN AMERICAN LITERATURE—Edited with an Introduction and Commentary by Kay S. House—m306, 95¢

THE STRUCTURE OF VERSE—Edited with an Introduction and Commentary by Harvey Gross—m304, 95¢

For complete catalog write:

EDUCATION DEPT.
FAWCETT WORLD LIBRARY
67 WEST 44 St.
NEW YORK, NEW YORK 10036

can expect to be shot at from both sides. Although a linguistic conservative, I must occupy a small amount of this middle ground. I generally approve of the book, but must state that it does have a few flaws.

According to the publisher, *Modern American Usage* was "edited and completed by Jacques Barzun, in collaboration with" six other experts. Since I can't tell what any of these persons did to or for the book, I here lay all praise and blame on Follett.

Physically, *Modern American Usage* is divided into four parts: an explanatory preface, an introduction, the lexicon and appendixes. In his preface, Follett has usefully discussed the plan of his book and given the reader an "Inventory of Main Entries in the Lexicon" that is divided into four parts headed Diction, Idiom, Syntax and Style. The Inventory is a useful device in itself. The introduction, which runs about thirty pages, is one of the best things of its kind ever written; and it ought to be required reading for any man who puts his words into print.

The theme of the introduction is that in language man is a choice-making animal. As such, says Follett, man should be aware of the available choices and requirements of the language: "Actually, language is made logical and clear by observing the norms of grammar and syntax; and it is made precise, vivid, and easy ('readable') by respecting the demands of idiom, connotation, tone, rhythm, and the other more fugitive virtues." Follett rightly identifies the "worst enemy of modern languages" as man's "universal desire to show off" by using the empty polysyllabisms of science and scholarship. And he makes the necessary point that the new jargons are pedantic in a way that those of the old, simple trades (sailing, farming and stealing) were not.

A major mistake of the self-conscious user of words is that of falling into *purism*, a term for which Follett gives an excellent definition: "Purism is another form of the pedantic. It singles out in the language of science and scholarship what is

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

literal and minute, as pedantry does the abstract and long-winded. Purism haggles over trifles and refuses to know when errors and confusions no longer matter." The proper use of linguistic self-consciousness is described by Follett in an introductory section of seven pages called "On the Need of An Orderly Mind," in which the principle is beautifully laid out "that where the orderly mind is not continuously in charge—before, during, and after the act of writing—all the signs and gestures of sound organization will not rule out blunder and chaos."

Most of the material in the lexicon proves that Follett had not only an orderly mind but also a sensible one. "The call for nicety," he writes in the article on pedantry, "is always to be met by the question of relevance—what's the point?" *Like* is commonly misused, as even English teachers know; Follett makes the necessary point that many writers, in their desperate attempt to keep from misusing *like,* commit "evasions" that "are as indefensible as the misuses of the word." Occasionally in his discussion of disputed usages, he finds that disputes are to some degree pointless. Quiller-Couch notwithstanding, Follett remarks, the word *case* has valuable uses—"*in case of fire* is correct, idiomatic, and unimprovable." The "overlapping forms" of *lie* and *lay* "cause more trouble than they are worth, and trip up even careful speakers." In his article on the pronunciation of foreign proper names, Follett suggests that we should not try to utter the original sounds but merely "give the nearest equivalent, with English sounds and without straining." He admits that some disputes cannot be resolved. Of the *that . . . that* construction (discussed under *"that, which,* relative") he says: "The conflicting arguments lie deep in the structure of the language and may never find a satisfactory resolution."

To be successful, the writer on usage needs to have a sharp eye for error and a sharp wit with which to attack those who, through carelessness or stupidity, make errors. Follett has both the eye and the wit.

The Writings of Herman Melville

THE NORTHWESTERN-NEWBERRY EDITION

edited by Harrison Hayford, Hershel Parker, and George Thomas Tanselle

Northwestern University Press and the Newberry Library of Chicago announce their joint publication of *The Writings of Herman Melville.* Originating through the Center for Editions of American Authors of the Modern Language Association, this edition as planned will include in fifteen volumes all of Melville's known writings.

Its purpose is to establish critical clear-copy texts of Melville's writings based on intensive literary research. Each volume will consist of the work itself as Melville had finally intended it, free from editorial and printing corruptions; textual variants; and an historical afterword. The initial two volumes are *Typee* and *Omoo.*

Typee	cloth, $10.00	paper, $1.75
Omoo	cloth, $10.00	paper, $1.75

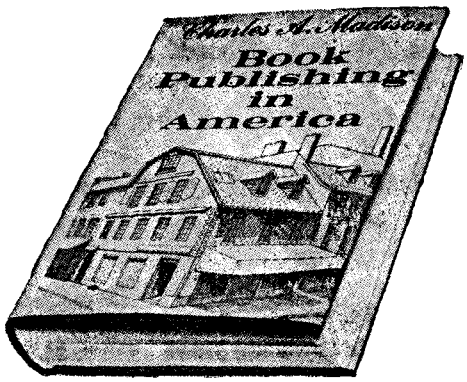
Price for the series in fifteen volumes is $180, with a standing order for the entire series carrying a 20% discount.

Northwestern University Press
1735 Benson Avenue
Evanston, Illinois 60201

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

All together to make just one book.

Alfred Knopf
Charles Scribner
Bennett Cerf
Harold McGraw
Henry Holt
Bernard Geis
Barney Rosset
Leon Shimkin
George Braziller
Nelson Doubleday
John Farrar
Roger Straus
Donald Brace
Horace Liveright
F. G. Melcher
Robert deGraff
George H. Doran
George Brett
Frank Taylor
M. L. Schuster



BOOK PUBLISHING IN AMERICA
by Charles Madison

"For insiders, this book promises a winter of table talk; for the public it offers a magnified view of the works ... even authors ought to consult it, if only to learn what goes on before they get their royalties."—*Chicago Tribune*

$12.50 at all bookstores
McGRAW-HILL

He makes, for example, an excellent comment on the misuse of *as* for *since* or *because* and notes accurately that this use of *as* "is always feeble." He says of the present vague use of *concept* (the concept of garbage collecting, the concept of air power—my own examples): "The vogue of *concept* as a word that will dignify any idea from a passing fancy to a full-fledged plan has blurred—probably forever—a useful distinction." He catches neatly the "absurdity" of the phrase *personal lives* ("as if we had some other kind") and adds that "one begins to suspect that *personal* is being substituted for *private,* to avoid the suggestion of secrecy or withdrawal from the group."

English usage is a complex subject, and authorities (being men) are imperfect. It is not surprising that one can occasionally argue with Follett's judgment. In his article on *center around,* he makes every argument against the phrase except the central one—that it is vague and almost meaningless. He argues against the silly but idiomatic use of *between* in "a pause between each word"; growls against the common but harmless misuse of *cohort* to mean partner or accomplice; and seriously suggests that *rationale* should be pronounced *"ray-shun-ay-lee,* with the accent on the third syllable." He wastes considerable space on the *who-whom* business and devotes over twenty pages of an appendix to *shall* and *will,* lost causes both. In the latter two articles, Follett perhaps becomes, according to his own definition of the word, a purist who refuses to know "when errors and confusions no longer matter."

But these errors in judgment, if they are errors, do not matter very much when one considers the general excellence of *Modern American Usage.* Good books on usage are remarkably difficult to write, a fact that caviling critics obstinately and typically refuse to recognize. *Modern American Usage* will not replace Fowler (perhaps nothing could), but it will nicely complement that work. At the national meeting of English teachers I mentioned earlier, a professor bitterly stated

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

that "we can have no faith in a modern theorist who bases his idea of usage on a book [Fowler] written forty years ago." Besides showing his ignorance of the fact that Fowler was recently revised, the professor was also displaying contempt for past intelligence. Any intelligent ideas about language, written in any time, should be cherished. As we have cherished Fowler, we would be wise to cherish Follett.

Of Prime Significance

NEW DIMENSIONS OF POLITICAL ECONOMY. *By Walter W. Heller. Harvard University Press. $3.50.*

Reviewed by EDWARD T. CHASE

A recent *New Yorker* cartoon depicts a chic upper-middle-class wife commenting to her husband over the newspapers, "I don't know a darn thing about Walter Heller. I just like to know he's there." He is "there" indeed; he has been ever since his 1961 appointment as chief of the Council of Economic Advisers; and, although he is no longer in the Administration, one is aware of his presence in all important national economic deliberations. What's more, the celebrated Heller Plan for state sharing of federal tax revenues has become a dominating issue in public affairs. Keynes, Galbraith and now Heller have been instrumental in dramatizing the truth—to the general public as distinct from the academic—that political economy is *the* core study if one wishes to understand the shape of the modern world or hopes ever to change it. So, far from being dismal, what Walter Heller has been up to is highly dramatic.

✪ EDWARD T. CHASE is a social critic and editor who contributes to many magazines including *Harper's, Book Week,* the *New Republic,* the *Atlantic Monthly,* the *Reporter,* the *Nation, Commonweal, Dissent.* He is a member of the Columbia University Seminar on Technology and Social Change, and a member of the Advisory Council of the Society for the History of Technology.

NEW YORK UNIVERSITY PRESS
WASHINGTON SQUARE, NEW YORK, NEW YORK 10003

New in the Gotham Library

AMERICAN CRITICAL ESSAYS on *The Divine Comedy*

Robert J. Clements, editor

A selection of thirteen essays from the best modern American writing on Dante's masterpiece, offering an expert introduction as well as placing Dante in today's world, 700 years after his birth. Critics include Wilkins, Tatlock, Hatzfeld, Singleton, Mazzeo, Speroni, Borgese, Auerbach.

253 pages

$2.25 paper*/$7.00 cloth

BRITISH ROMANTIC POETS

Recent Revaluations

Shiv K. Kumar, editor

Nineteen essays by major critics offer a general introduction to Romanticism as well as penetrating analyses of the works of Shelley, Keats, Byron, Wordsworth, and Coleridge. Among the critics—Peckham, Foakes, Raysor, Stallknecht, Bowra, Fogle, Brooks.
327 pages

$2.75 paper*/$7.50 cloth

** Please enclose payment with orders for single copies of paperbacks.*

NEW YORK UNIVERSITY PRESS
WASHINGTON SQUARE, NEW YORK, NEW YORK 10003

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

A BOON FOR SCHOLARS

"I have found it [CHRONOLOGY OF THE MODERN WORLD] of the greatest value possible." —ANGUS WILSON

". . . it must be one of the most entertaining books ever compiled."
—SIR KENNETH CLARK, *Art Historian*

"One cannot pick it up without meeting at once some striking and unexpected fact."
—SIR THOMAS ARMSTRONG, *Principal of the Royal Academy of Music*

". . . an indispensable work of reference . . . This book may be recommended unreservedly. . . ."
—THE HON. GILES ST. AUBYN, *Senior History Master, Eaton College*

Chronology of the Modern World

1763 to the Present Time

Compiled by Neville Williams, M.A., D.Phil., F.S.A., F.R.Hist.Soc.

This unique one-volume reference work provides a comprehensive dictionary of significant dates from January 1763 to December 1965. Each historical event is seen in its immediate historical perspective. Left-hand pages chronicle political and military events of each month of each year, while the right-hand pages for the corresponding period are arranged by subject sections dealing with politics, economics, philosophy, technology, discovery, science, religion, scholarship, art, sculpture, architecture, music, literature, the press, drama, entertainment, sports, births and deaths of noted persons, and more. The volume includes an encyclopedic index of cross references, with a generous provision of "subject" entries in which persons are identified by their full names, titles, dates, nationalities, and claims to fame, and in which places are carefully pinpointed on the world map of 1966.

940 Pages $12.50 at your bookstore

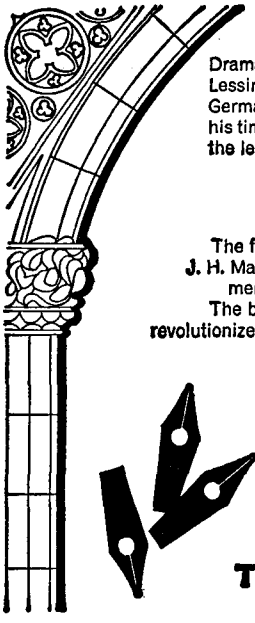
DAVID McKAY COMPANY, INC.
New York, N. Y. 10017

Much of this comes through plainly in his new book, the three Godkin Lectures (painstakingly worked over and revised) that Heller gave at Harvard last spring. But, even though he is unusually confidential, even chatty, there would have been improprieties had he indulged himself in candid comment about the background political context of these issues. For example, he has been sharply criticized (by J. K. Galbraith, Leon Keyserling, Robert Lekachman, the liberal left) for opting for the tax cut as the remedy for fiscal drag instead of a comparable amount of additional federal spending for domestic welfare programs. The consequence, his critics emphasize, was a vast increase in the income of the private sector, overwhelmingly for corporations and for the wealthy, a deference to the ancient doctrine of consumer sovereignty with a vengeance, $16 billion worth. As a result corporate profits after taxes doubled, while the overall national output and real wages increased by one third. The rich indeed got richer, the poor got only a little richer (factory workers improved their real incomes by a mere 18%). Public services were not directly touched at all.

Yet Heller is persuasive on the record in this book, and altogether compelling in other writings and in conversations, in his insistence that, given Congress' complexion and mood, the political prospect in 1963-64 for approval of vastly increased spending for worthy unmet domestic needs was all but hopeless. It was convulsion enough when President Kennedy and the Establishment finally became convinced that deficit financing would accomplish its paradoxes of economic growth, larger federal revenues, balanced budget and reduced unemployment.

Heller also has been roundly taken to task (notably by Professor Charles Killingsworth of Michigan State) for allegedly depreciating the evidence of structural impediments to full employment, principally automation, and relying entirely upon stimulation of aggregate demand. Killingsworth's is a formidable analysis, showing that technological

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

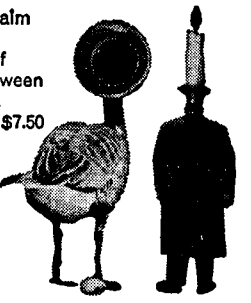


Lessing and the Enlightenment

HENRY E. ALLISON

Dramatist and critic, philosopher and scholar, Gotthold Ephraim Lessing was the central figure of the Enlightenment in Germany and one of the most significant religious thinkers of his time. Henry E. Allison shows that Lessing's distinction between the letter and spirit of religion has lost none of its relevance.

228 PAGES $7.50



Surrealism and the Novel

J. H. Matthews

The first full-length study of surrealism's impact on fiction. J. H. Matthews discusses selected novels by writers who were members of the surrealist group or were influenced by it. The book shows how both content and structure have been revolutionized by this major artistic movement. 198 PAGES $5.95

Remy de Gourmont: Selected Writings

GLENN S. BURNE, Translator and Editor

Remy de Gourmont, an editor of the influential *Mercure de France* from 1885 to 1915, wrote about the important ideas and intellectual movements of his day with acute critical perception and biting, ironical style. His penetrating insights and wit make these essays as readable today as when they were written. 236 PAGES $5.95

THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN PRESS

ANN ARBOR

The Doctor on the Stage

MEDICINE AND MEDICAL MEN IN SEVENTEENTH-CENTURY ENGLAND

by Herbert Silvette, edited by Francelia Butler

The essence of Restoration comedy is captured in this delightful interpretation of medicine's place in seventeenth-century life. Medical metaphors and allusions revealed in an examination of more than five hundred plays allow the author to present—with unerring knowledge and a sometimes irreverent touch—the period's popular medical belief concerning physicians and apothecaries, cures and remedies, ailments and diseases, and quacks and the "virtuosi."

April 24, 1967, 320 pp., $7.50

At your bookstore or directly from
THE UNIVERSITY OF TENNESSEE PRESS
Knoxville, Tennessee 37916

EMPTINESS

A STUDY IN RELIGIOUS MEANING

A Depth Study of the Philosopher Nagarjuna and His Interpretation of Ultimate Reality

FREDERICK J. STRENG. A definitive analysis of the Buddhist concept of "emptiness" as an expression of Ultimate Reality. Includes translations of Nagarjuna's "Fundamentals of the Middle Way" and "Averting the Arguments." Bibliography and index. 256 pages. **$5.50**

At your local bookstore

ABINGDON PRESS

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

PONTIFICAL INSTITUTE OF MEDIAEVAL STUDIES

Publishers of Scholarly Works on the Middle Ages.

Our Annual Journal—*Mediaeval Studies*
Series: *Studies and Texts*
: *Mediaeval Sources in Translation*

Announcing for Spring, 1967:

G. B. Phelan: Selected Papers, edited by A. Kirn, CSB.

Our list of *Books in Print* sent upon request.

The Department of Publications
Pontifical Institute of Mediaeval Studies
59 Queen's Park Cres.
Toronto 5, Ontario, Canada.

change is in truth altering the conditions of and diminishing the chances for employment in major sectors of the economy. Up to now, though, aggregate demand expedients have in fact worked successfully. But the truth is that Heller did recognize the validity of much of the structuralists' argument and was the crucial figure in the Kennedy Administration in advocating that key therapy, the anti-poverty war. He so urged, as he reveals, the moment he was assured that the tax cut would be approved. He saw this "structuralist" expedient as an essential complementary measure to achieve an unemployment rate below 4%. Late in 1963 he organized the effort within his Council of Economic Advisers to devise appropriate measures to break through the vicious poverty circle (namely: poverty demoralizes, which in turn leads to low mobility, poor health and bad education, which in turn limits earning potential, which in turn results in poverty *ad infinitum*). What came out of this effort eventually was the structuralist program for rehabilitation and prevention embodied in the Economic Opportunity Act. What's more, Heller was also a powerful advocate of earlier structural programs, the Manpower Development and Training Act and the Area Redevelopment Administration, both focused on retraining.

The present book, detailing the thinking and politicking behind all this, is Heller's first since leaving Washington and is thus, first of all, of prime historical significance. Many readers, however, will value the book more for the lucidity with which it explains the technicalities of "the new economics." Heller sees the nub of the new economics as a process in what is called "gap closing." The specific gap is the difference between the *actual* level of the gross national product and its *potential* level at "full" employment (4% unemployment) and "full" (92%) use of productive facilities. The step to close the gap in 1964 was a tax cut, arrived at by calculations based on long-observed stable relationships between income and consumption and investment, along with accurate forecasts of multiplier and accelerator effects. It worked just about exactly as predicted. Heller and his colleagues have every right to feel pleased that they demonstrated unequivocally that with a bit of luck the right flexible fiscal policies (cutting or increasing taxes as circumstances dictate) can provide *controlled economic expansion* with its benefactions of high employment, increased revenues, stable price levels and, wonder of wonders, balanced budgets. I say bit of luck because, in reality, any major acceleration in technological change (say, a vast increase in computerized automation) or radically arbitrary insistence upon much higher prices or much higher wages in major industries would reveal that fiscal strategy, for all its effectiveness, has real limitations in a free economy. The 1966 breakdown of the wage-price guidelines has shown us this. Heller acknowledges as much in his preface, in which he writes that policy now centers on "enlarging the economy's non-inflationary potential."

It is Heller's third and concluding lec-

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

AUTOBIOGRAPHY of a YOGI

by Paramahansa Yogananda

UNITED PRESS: "Yogananda expounds the so-called esoteric doctrines of the East with the utmost frankness and good humor. His book is rewarding for its account of a life filled with spiritual adventure."

THOMAS MANN, Nobel prizeman: "I am grateful to you for granting me some insight into this fascinating world."

NEWSWEEK: "A fascinating and clearly annotated study."

Dr. W. Y. Evans-Wentz writes in the foreword: "The value of Yogananda's *Autobiography* is greatly enhanced by the fact that it is one of the few books in English about the wise men of India which have been written, not by a journalist or foreigner, but by one of their own race and training—in short, a book *about* yogis *by* a yogi."

$4.00 at your bookstore

Self-Realization Fellowship, Publishers

3880 San Rafael Avenue Los Angeles 65, California

COMPLETE PROCEEDINGS: Vision 65

Now... the full text of *Vision 65*, "World Congress on New Challenges for Human Communications", convened at Southern Illinois University, Oct. 21-23, 1965. The volume contains all papers delivered by, among others, *Max Bill, Will Burtin, R. Buckminster Fuller, H. Marshall McLuhan, Robert Osborn, W. J. H. B. Sandberg, Herbert Spencer, Roger Stevens.* A few of these major statements formed the heart of the Spring 1966 issue of The American Scholar (The Electronic Revolution). An international interdisciplinary professional colloquium on survival and growth, the book is available from *The International Center for the Communication Arts & Sciences, Inc. (ICCAS)*, 305 East 46 Street, N.Y. 10017, USA, at *$10 postpaid.*

The second international congress, Vision 67, will be held at Loeb Center, New York University Washington Square Campus, on October 19-21, 1967. As participation will be world-wide, please return coupon below promptly for information on **Vision 67** advance registration and program schedule:

INTERNATIONAL CENTER FOR
THE COMMUNICATION ARTS & SCIENCES,
305 E. 46 ST., N.Y. 10017, USA

Vision 67

☐ I plan to attend *Vision 67*. Send details.

☐ Enclosed is $10 for full text of *Vision 65*.

Name_____

Address_____

City_____ State_____ Zip_____

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

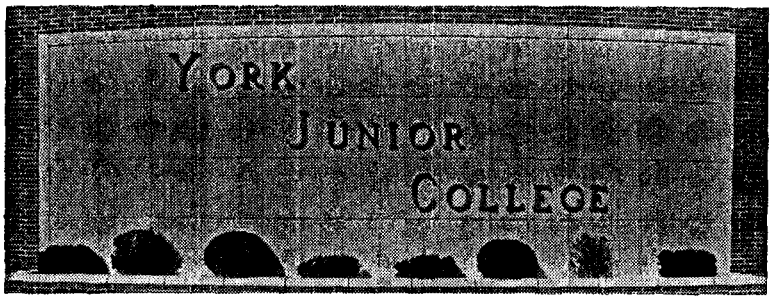
ture that is most significant for current policy. For here is the definitive exposition of the Heller-Joseph Pechman (of Brookings) plan to return surplus tax revenues to the states. It is an appealing rationale. At existing tax and growth rates there is now an *automatic* growth in federal revenues of about $7 billion yearly. We must thus "declare the fiscal dividend," in Heller's words—that is, spend it usefully, or the dividend won't continue to develop. For the economy would slow down under fiscal drag. Since the states and localities have relatively inelastic tax revenues (largely from property, sales, excise taxes) but have become overwhelmed with burgeoning metropolitan problems, logic dictates the surplus in federal coffers be returned to them. Besides, traditional state and local responsibilities like education, health, *et cetera*, now involve national interests. What could be more important to the strengthening of federalism and the achievement of the Great Society than this ingenious scheme!

In fact, however, the scheme has been heatedly endorsed and heatedly denounced, and, ironically enough, the denunciations are coming from the Administration and the ideologues of the Great Society, the support from the conservative Republican leadership. The latter see the plan as a way to bypass Washington through unconditional grants to the states. The critics, on the other hand, fear that such grants in the hands of inept stale bureaucrats will produce waste and the perpetuation of failed policies. Heller is distressed by these developments. Quite rightly, he will not concede that such grants will allow for violation of national law, such as the Civil Rights Act ban on federal funding of programs permitting racial discrimination. Nor, indeed, is there any inherent reason why such grants could not be conditional, for example in education or health, on meeting certain national minimum standards.

So Walter Heller is still "there" in 1967, as the 90th Congress moves along, in a most important sense: his plan is the crux of a tense new struggle over federal aid. For the contestants, surely, this is the right book at the right time. It is also an indispensable book for anyone who wants to understand how policy has been arrived at in the Kennedy and Johnson Administrations.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

STUDY IN PENNSYLVANIA



• Coed • New 57-acre Campus • Middle States Accreditation
• Men's and Women's Dormitories • Cultural and Athletic Activities

MAJORS IN: Liberal Arts; Science and Engineering; Business Administration

LOCATION: Southern Pennsylvania, near Washington, D. C., Philadelphia, Pa., and Baltimore, Md.

FOR FURTHER INFORMATION, CONTACT:

Director of Admissions
Box 100, York Junior College
Country Club Road
York, Pennsylvania 17405.

ALLEGHENY
COLLEGE

A liberal arts college where students are urged to seek knowledge in terms of their own questions, and "education" is much more than the passive acceptance of subject matter.

Home of Eta of Pennsylvania, Phi Beta Kappa

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

EXCELLENCE . . .

Jean Lennon '64, History major, Peace Corps, Colombia, South America '64-'66; teaching Peace Corps Volunteers, Brandeis U., summer, '66; internship, Stanford U., '66-

. . . CLARKE COLLEGE

Dubuque, Iowa 52001, Box AS

Augustana College

Rock Island, Illinois

ZETA CHAPTER OF ILLINOIS
PHI BETA KAPPA

For more than a century, Augustana College has been committed to a program of excellence in the liberal arts.

The College was founded by graduates of European universities, and throughout its history has maintained a close relationship to the Lutheran Church.

The climate of the campus today reflects this historic concern for a superior academic program as well as a sense of values.

C. W. SORENSEN, *President*

With one teacher for every twelve students

Cedar Crest College

offers special attention to each individual in its four-year liberal arts program.

First emphasis is placed on a sound undergraduate education in the arts and sciences, culminating in a B.A. degree. Cedar Crest also qualifies students for specialization in graduate schools and offers a B.S. program in nursing and medical technology.

Integrity, emotional stability and maturity, as well as academic achievement, are weighed when considering applicants.

Cedar Crest College is located on a 104-acre campus bordering Allentown, Pennsylvania, in the historic Lehigh Valley. New York City and Philadelphia, within easy traveling distance, provide additional opportunities for cultural and academic growth.

THE COLLEGE OF ST. CATHERINE

a Liberal Arts College

for women

conducted by the Sisters of

St. Joseph of Carondelet

St. Paul, Minnesota

Write

Director of Admissions

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

IN SEARCH OF CHALLENGE?

New College at Hofstra University is a self-contained academic community within Hofstra University. In it a limited number of select students earn the bachelor of arts degree in three instead of four years.

Founded with strong financial support of the Ford Foundation, New College brings student and teacher together in an exceptional atmosphere of learning, questioning, and personal growth. Faculty members are selected for their willingness to make the deep teaching commitment demanded by such scholarly, intimate, personal involvement.

The New College year is of 40 weeks' duration as compared with the traditional 30-week year offered at most colleges. Upon entering, students become part of a tightly-knit intellectual community. Here, in this more ideal involvement, they pursue a challenging liberal arts curriculum, undertaking greater amounts of independent study as the tempo develops.

Hofstra has much to offer. It is a non-sectarian, coeducational, high-achievement liberal arts university of 12,000 top-level students—graduate and undergraduate. Ideally situated in Hempstead, Long Island, Hofstra is only 25 miles from Manhattan. In a spacious suburban setting, the University offers one of the nation's most modern large libraries and, by fall, 1967, four exceptional, new residence halls (two are already completed). In addition to four other interrelated academic areas, it offers a superb cultural atmosphere, including heavy on-campus residency of exceptional musicians, dancers, artists, actors, and Fine Arts scholars.

Inquiries should be addressed to:
Francis W. Dana, II
Director of Admissions
Hofstra University
Hempstead, Long Island, New York

Cornell College

FOUNDED 1853

MOUNT VERNON, IOWA

A fully accredited
co-educational
and residential
liberal arts college
Delta of Iowa

FAIRFIELD UNIVERSITY

THE JESUIT UNIVERSITY
OF SOUTHERN NEW ENGLAND

College of Arts & Sciences (men, boarding)

Graduate School of Education (coed)

Graduate School of Corporate and Political Communication (coed)

Undergraduate and Graduate Summer School Programs (coed, boarding)

The University's 200-acre campus is located in the colonial town of Fairfield on Long Island Sound, one hour from New York City, Exit 22, New England Thruway, or Exit 44, Merritt Parkway.

FAIRFIELD, CONNECTICUT

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Franconia College

franconia new hampshire

A FOUR-YEAR
LIBERAL ARTS COLLEGE
in the White Mountains

300 students, 40 teachers

After completing a flexible two-year program in the humanities, Franconia students are responsible for planning their own specialized curriculum under faculty guidance. Educational opportunities include individual and independent studies, and a wide variety of off-campus study projects.

A community government and work program require personal involvement in the ongoing operation of the College.

Telephone 603: 823-5544

HUSSON
COLLEGE
157 Park St.
Bangor, Maine

Degree and Assoc. in Business Science
Degree Courses For Business Careers

B.S. in Accounting
B.S. in Secretarial Science
B.S. in Business Administration
B.S. in Business Education (for teachers)

Basketball, Baseball, Golf, Soccer. Cross-country and intra-mural sports.

DORMITORIES FOR MEN AND WOMEN
National Sororities and Fraternities,
Student body 1,200
Catalog on request C. H. Husson, Sr., Pres.

BURDETT COLLEGE
A Junior College of Business
SCHOOL OF BUSINESS ADMINISTRATION

Majors
Accounting — Management — Marketing

SCHOOL OF SECRETARIAL SCIENCE

Majors
Executive — Medical
Technical — Legal

Founded 1879—Coeducational—Dormitories
Catalog—A. C. Coffin, Director of Admissions
160 Beacon St., Boston, Mass. 02116

THE CATHOLIC UNIVERSITY OF AMERICA
Washington, D. C. (20017)

Liberal Arts College and Graduate School of Arts and Sciences, Social Sciences, Philosophy, Education, and Music. Professional work in Engineering, Architecture, Social Work, Law, Nursing, and Ecclesiastical Studies. Air Force ROTC.

Charter Member, Association of American Universities
Accredited by Middle States Association

For information write Registrar, Dept. A.S.

Summer School

CLARK UNIVERSITY
WORCESTER, MASSACHUSETTS

INTERSESSION: Days—June 12-July 1
INTERSESSION: Nights—June 12-July 7
SUMMER SESSION: Days—July 3-August 19
SUMMER SESSION: Nights—July 10-August 19

COEDUCATIONAL: Arts, Sciences, Education, Business

COLLEGE MISERICORDIA
Dallas, Pennsylvania

Accredited liberal arts college for women.

Conducted by the Sisters of Mercy of the Union.

For further information write to the Director of Admissions.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

JOHNSON C. SMITH UNIVERSITY

CHARLOTTE, NORTH CAROLINA 28208

Founded April 7, 1867

A coeducational institution with a College of Liberal Arts offering courses leading to the degree of Bachelor of Arts or Bachelor of Science; a School of Theology offering courses leading to the degree of Bachelor of Divinity.

The institution is a member of the Southern Association of Colleges and Schools.

For information write the Registrar.

RUFUS P. PERRY, *President*

Education in the Jesuit tradition: Degree programs in 40 fields of the Arts, Social Sciences, Natural Sciences, Business, Economics, Government. Pre-professional study leading to Law, Medicine, Dentistry, Engineering, Teaching. Scenic, 60-acre campus in suburban Cleveland.

John Carroll University
University Hts., Ohio 44118

DARTMOUTH COLLEGE

Coeducational Summer Term 1967

Humanities, sciences, social sciences.
Congregation of the Arts (drama, music, painting, sculpture).

June 25 to August 19

For information send coupon below to:

DARTMOUTH COLLEGE, P. O. Box 582, Hanover, N. H., 03755

Please send Summer Term *Bulletin* to:

NAME _____

ADDRESS _____

AS _____ (Zip)

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

LAKE FOREST ACADEMY

Lake Forest, Ill.

Founded 1857

BOYS' COLLEGE PREPARATORY

HAROLD H. CORBIN, JR.

Headmaster

Information and catalog upon request

MACALESTER COLLEGE

Chartered in 1874

A fully accredited liberal arts college historically related to the Presbyterian Church.
Non-sectarian in teaching and admissions policy.

Saint Paul **Minnesota**

THE DEFIANCE COLLEGE

Defiance, Ohio

Coeducational with limited enrollment (1,000) Church-related, fully accredited four year institution. Cost: $2,300 annually, room, board, books & tuition.
Courses include: liberal arts and science, teacher education, pre-professional and business administration.

Write: **Admissions Office**
or **The Defiance College**
Call **Defiance, Ohio 43512**

DICKINSON

founded 1773
HOME OF
ALPHA OF PENNSYLVANIA
PHI BETA KAPPA

A Colonial College founded by Benjamin Rush, James Wilson and John Dickinson. The standard of its architecture is set by Benjamin Latrobe's free gift of plans for West College, called "the most subtly designed of all early American College structures."

HOWARD L. RUBENDALL, President
Carlisle, Penna.

EUREKA COLLEGE

Chartered 1855

Fully Accredited, Four Year Liberal Arts College, Coeducation, Church Related, A.B. and B.S. Degrees.

Majors within Four Divisions.

Intensive Study Plan offers Concentrated Study in Two or Three Courses per term.

Spacious Campus near Two Large Cities.

Write: Director of Admissions
EUREKA COLLEGE
Eureka, Illinois 61530

FRENCH SUMMER SCHOOL

in QUEBEC

UNIVERSITE LAVAL

Elementary, undergraduate and graduate courses. Extra curricular activities. Living accommodations with French-speaking families.

July 3—August 12, 1967

Université Laval, Québec (10e)
Canada

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

MARLBORO COLLEGE

MARLBORO, VERMONT

A Small Accredited Co-educational, Four-Year Liberal Arts College

Location: A picturesque campus in the hills of Southern Vermont.

Curriculum: A flexible program of General Education coupled with an individual plan of concentration on the honors model.

Community: A town meeting government in which each student and teacher has a voice and one vote.

Objective: Graduates with an acquaintance with several academic fields, competence in one, with a background of community responsibility.

Write: T. F. Little, Chairman Committee on Admissions, Marlboro College Box 64, Marlboro, Vermont.

MARYWOOD COLLEGE

Accredited Catholic College for Women

Fully accredited college of the arts and sciences, conducted by the Congregation of the Sisters, Servants of the Immaculate Heart of Mary, Scranton, Pa., on a beautiful suburban campus convenient to the facilities of one of the largest cities in the state.

Undergraduate Program: A.B., B.S., B.M. degrees. Major studies in art, biology, chemistry, classical languages, dietetics, drama, English, French, Spanish, history, home economics, mathematics, music (NASM accr.), clinical psychology, social studies, sociology, speech, elementary, secondary, special (mental retardation), and business education (NCATE accr.), medical technology.

Masters Degrees: Granted in education, psychology and librarianship.

Address ADMISSIONS
Marywood College, Box B
Scranton, Pennsylvania 18509

FURMAN UNIVERSITY

Greenville, South Carolina

An institution of liberal arts and sciences, fully approved by the appropriate accrediting agencies.

Outstanding features:

a superior faculty
high academic standards
a new 1,200-acre campus.

Student body: 1,566 men and women

Expenses:

Tuition and Fees .....$1,000.00 per year
Room and Board .....$ 975.00 " "

GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY

The Summer School
Washington, D. C. 20007

Two Sessions: June 13—Sept. 1, 1967

Arts & Sciences, Graduate courses, Nursing, Foreign Service, Psychology, Languages, Business Administration, Economics, Conferences, Institutes and Workstudy Programs.

STUDY ABROAD
MOSCOW: June 18—August 18
SALZBURG: July 9—Aug. 19
DIJON: July 3—Aug. 12
GUADALAJARA, MEXICO: July 3—Aug. 12
SOPHIA UNIVERSITY, TOKYO: July 6—Aug. 12

HAMPTON INSTITUTE

OFFERS

An Approved Educational and Cultural Program in Technology, Music, Arts and Sciences, and Teacher Education, B.S., B.A. & M.A. degrees.

For information write:

Registrar: Hampton Institute
HAMPTON, VIRGINIA

HOWARD UNIVERSITY

WASHINGTON, D. C.

FOUNDED 1867

10 SCHOOLS AND COLLEGES

UNDERGRADUATE • GRADUATE • PROFESSIONAL

GAMMA CHAPTER
DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

MUHLENBERG COLLEGE

Allentown, Pennsylvania
Founded 1848

A Coeducational
Lutheran Liberal Arts College

For Information
Write:
Director of Admissions

OTTERBEIN COLLEGE

WESTERVILLE, OHIO

- **The first college in the United States to be founded as a co-educational college**
- **Liberal Arts, Pre-Professional and Professional Studies**
- **Church-Affiliated ÷ Evangelical United Brethren**
- **Strong Professor-Student Relationship**
- **Friendly campus**
- **15 miles north of Columbus, Ohio**

Inquiries should be addressed to:

Director of Admissions
Otterbein College
Westerville, Ohio

telephone:
Area code 614 882-3601

DAVID LIPSCOMB COLLEGE

Offers Quality Education in a Christian Environment

The earned doctor's degree is held by 48 per cent of Lipscomb faculty members, and major programs are offered in 25 academic fields leading to the B.A. or B.S. degree. Lipscomb operates on a year-round basis, making it possible for students to graduate in three calendar years by attending four quarters each year. The college is church related and is supported by members of churches of Christ throughout the country.

For further information, write
Willard Collins, Vice-President
DAVID LIPSCOMB COLLEGE
NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE 37203

Athens Clay Pullias, President
Mack Wayne Craig, Dean

LAFAYETTE COLLEGE

Easton, Pa. 18042

Privately endowed college for 1700 undergraduate men encourages exchange of ideas through unusual program combining arts-sciences-engineering on *one* residential campus with *one* faculty, *one* educational approach; independent studies encouraged; Scholars Program for selected upperclassmen; A.B. majors in humanities, sciences, interdepartmental programs; B.S. in chemistry, mathematics, physics, 6 fields of engineering; 5-year programs lead to two degrees; two million dollar Ford Foundation award for achievements, potential received 1963; new library opened 1963; Phi Beta Kappa, Tau Beta Pi; new Freshman Quadrangle for all resident freshmen opened for occupancy Fall 1966.

BOB JONES *University*

COLLEGE OF ARTS AND SCIENCE
SCHOOL OF RELIGION
SCHOOL OF FINE ARTS
SCHOOL OF EDUCATION
SCHOOL OF BUSINESS
* * * *
INSTITUTE OF CHRISTIAN SERVICE
* * *
ACADEMY AND SEVENTH AND EIGHTH GRADES IN CONNECTION

"World's Most Unusual University"
GREENVILLE • SOUTH CAROLINA

Mills College of Education

Accredited Independent College for Women

Four-year program of liberal arts and professional studies leads to B.S. degree. Graduates certified to teach nursery, kindergarten, elementary grades. Extensive field trips. Cultural advantages of N.Y.C. Full social program. Resident and Day Students.

February and September Admission

Box AS 66 Fifth Ave., N. Y. 11 • OR 5-0830

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

QUEENS COLLEGE
of The City University of New York

Graduate Programs 1967-68

MASTER OF ARTS

Biology, Chemistry, Classics, Communication Arts and Sciences, Comparative Literature, Economics, English, Geology, German, History, Ibero-American Area Studies, Mathematics, Music, Philosophy, Physics, Political Science, Psychology, Romance Languages, Sociology.

PROGRAM OF STUDY ABROAD

Year of graduate study abroad at Queens College Centers at universities in France, Spain, Germany, England, and Puerto Rico.

MASTER OF LIBRARY SCIENCE

Public and School Librarianship

DOCTORAL PROGRAMS

Participation in Doctoral programs of The City University in the fields of Biology, Chemistry, Economics, English and Comparative Literature, History, Philosophy, Physics, Political Science, Portuguese, Psychology, Sociology, and Speech.

Some Assistantships available.

For information write:
Graduate Registrar, Queens College
Flushing, New York 11367

NATIONAL COLLEGE OF EDUCATION
Evanston, Illinois 60201

EXCELLENCE IN LIBERAL ARTS

Bachelor of Arts Degree
Majors Offered in Seven Subject Matter Fields
and Full Sequence in Elementary Education

THE NEW HORIZON IN TEACHER EDUCATION
National College Continues Its Superior, Long-Established Program of Preparation for Elementary Teachers.

The Graduate School Offers Programs in Elementary Teacher Education for Graduates Holding Degrees in Liberal Arts and Sciences or in Education.
Master of Education Degree.

Dormitories **Summer School**

NATIONAL COLLEGE OF EDUCATION
Evanston, Illinois

PLYMOUTH STATE COLLEGE

of the University of New Hampshire. In New Hampshire's scenic lake and mountain recreation area. Programs in liberal arts, business administration, and teacher education.

Summer session, June 26-Aug. 4, 1967
Regular year starts Sept. 10, 1967

For information write:
Director of Admissions
PLYMOUTH STATE COLLEGE
Plymouth, N. H.—03264

C.W. POST
COLLEGE CAMPUS
OF LONG ISLAND UNIVERSITY

"New Dimensions in Learning"

The C.W. Post College Campus is oriented in the true liberal arts tradition.

The four-year undergraduate programs leading to the B.A. and B.S. degrees are offered in the divisions of the humanities, social sciences, science, education, and business administration by a distinguished faculty dedicated to teaching.

Graduate programs leading to the M.A., M.S., and M.B.A. degrees are offered in the graduate schools of Long Island University on the C.W. Post College Campus. Courses are given in the Biological Sciences, Business Administration, Chemistry, Art Education, Elementary and Secondary Education leading to State Certification, Engineering Sciences, English, Foreign Languages, Guidance and Counseling, History, Library Science, Marine Science, Mathematics, Music Education, Physics, Political Science, Sociology, and Speech.

Residence facilities are available on the beautiful C.W. Post College Campus for undergraduate men and women.

For further information, write or phone:
Director of Admissions
C.W. Post College
P.O. Greenvale, Long Island, N.Y. 11548
(516) MA 6-1200

PACIFIC LUTHERAN UNIVERSITY

Fully accredited degree granting institution. 5-year education program with Master's degree. College of Arts and Sciences. College of Professional Studies . . . Schools of Business Administration, Education, Fine & Applied Arts, Nursing. 9 week summer session. Graduate Division.

For information, write:

Director of Admissions, PLU
Tacoma, Washington 98447

NORTH CENTRAL COLLEGE

Private, coeducational, church-related, midwestern, liberal arts college. Located 29 miles west of Chicago. Majors in 22 departments lead to B.A., B.M., and B.M.E. degrees.

Special study programs include the Honors Program, independent study and a unique Mid-Winter Term for independent study, research, special seminars and travel.

Every student is offered education in breadth when he fulfills requirements for the Core Curriculum in the liberal arts and sciences.

Scholarships are available.

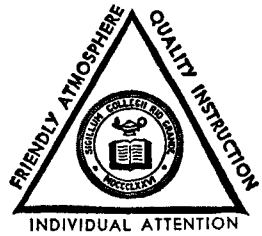
Write: Admissions Office
North Central College
Naperville, Illinois 60540

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

RIO GRANDE

• Arts •
• Sciences •
• Education •

Applications now received for fall or summer semesters



PRIVATE LIBERAL ARTS COLLEGE IN SOUTHERN OHIO

Director of admissions, Rio Grande College, Rio Grande, Ohio 45674

PHILANDER SMITH COLLEGE

Little Rock, Arkansas

A College of Service and Distinction

Emphasis upon "Quality Education" and Personality Development. Provides a program for the student of exceptional abilities, as well as for the student who needs help in the development and use of college level skills in reading, writing, speaking, listening, organizing and interpreting information, and mathematics. Offers a liberal arts curriculum to help students prepare for graduate study and for professional training. Offers 17 major programs.

REGISTRATION:

Summer Session, June 12, 1967
Fall Semester, September 11, 1967
Ernest T. Dixon, Jr., President

QUEENS COLLEGE

Charlotte, North Carolina

Church affiliated liberal arts college for women . . . A.B. and B. Mus. degrees . . . emphasis upon the kind of teaching which can be done only in the small college.

For information write
Admissions Office

THE UNIVERSITY OF REDLANDS

Redlands, California 92373

Four-year Liberal Arts College
•
Graduate work in several fields
•
Special program for Able Students
•
European semester
Summer programs in France and in Mexico
•
Graduates hold many scholarships
Danforth, Woodrow Wilson, General Electric

GEORGE H. ARMACOST, *president*

RANDOLPH-MACON COLLEGE
Ashland, Virginia
Chartered 1830

Randolph-Macon College is the oldest Methodist college in America, by date of charter. For over a century it has made diligent effort to create and maintain an atmosphere helpful to the growth of virile Christian character, free from the destructive elements that weaken the spiritual life of young men. That it has succeeded is attested by the records of its graduates.

A member institution of the Southern Association of Colleges and Schools, of the Association of American Colleges, and of the Southern University Conference. On the approved list of the Association of American Universities. Confers the degrees of Bachelor of Arts and Bachelor of Science and provides carefully arranged pre-professional courses leading to medicine, law, engineering, and the ministry. The College takes special pride in the large percentage of its graduates who continue their training in professional and graduate schools.

J. EARL MORELAND, *President*

ST. MARY'S DOMINICAN COLLEGE

Established 1910

New Orleans, Louisiana

A fully accredited Liberal Arts College for women.

Write:
Registrar — New Orleans 70118

ST. OLAF COLLEGE

Northfield, Minnesota

A fully accredited liberal arts college.

New Curriculum and Calendar in 1964

Excellent library facilities.

Four year guaranteed cost plan
Minnesota Delta Chapter, Phi Beta Kappa
SIDNEY A. RAND, *President*

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Our vote ☐
of confidence in
the Liberal Arts

☐ Christianity and Culture—a 7-semester core program which is interdisciplinary and thought-provoking.

☐ Radical approach to undergraduate science which is research-oriented and concept-centered.

☐ Bachelor of music degree with professional training in voice and instruments.

☐ 25 major programs of study.

St. Andrews
Presbyterian College

Laurinburg, N. C. 28352

SAMFORD UNIVERSITY
(formerly Howard College)

Birmingham, Alabama
Founded 1842

A fully accredited, co-educational university with strong liberal arts program. Samford, an agency of the Alabama Baptist State Convention, is composed of Howard College of Liberal Arts, the Cumberland School of Law and professional schools of Business, Education, Music and Pharmacy. Graduate work at the masters degree level is also offered.

QUALITY EDUCATION

on

An all-new campus of Colonial-Georgian architecture located on a picturesque, 400-acre mountainous site. Excellent faculty, wide range of courses.

Leslie S. Wright, President

STETSON UNIVERSITY

College of Liberal Arts
School of Music — School of Business
College of Law (at St. Petersburg)

Accredited by
Southern Association of Colleges and Schools
National Association of Schools of Music
American Bar Association
National Council for the Accreditation of Teacher Education

Approved by
American Association of University Women

Member of
Southern University Conference

Stetson emphasizes the liberal arts tradition in the atmosphere of the small Christian university.

J. OLLIE EDMUNDS, President
DeLand, Florida 32720

WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY
St. Louis, Missouri

SUMMER SESSIONS 1967

Two Day Sessions:
June 19—July 26
July 27—Sept. 1

Catalogue Request
Summer Sessions 1967

Name _____

Address _____

City _____ State_____ Zip Code_____

Mail to: The Summer School
Box 1145
Washington University
St. Louis, Missouri 63130

A.S.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

SETON HILL is

- a four-year liberal arts college for women
- conducted by the Sisters of Charity

SETON HILL grants the degrees

- Bachelor of Arts
- Bachelor of Science in Home Economics
- Bachelor of Music

SETON HILL has

- highest possible regional and national accreditation
- an enrollment of approximately 750 students
- a distinguished faculty—lay and religious
- a 209-acre campus, 30 miles east of Pittsburgh

Director of Admissions, Box L

SETON HILL COLLEGE

Greensburg, Pennsylvania 15601

WILSON COLLEGE

Founded 1869

Wilson is a distinguished college of liberal arts and sciences for women, with enrollment of more than 700 students from 30 states, foreign countries. Academic program includes independent study and honors work; French, German, and Spanish language houses; Junior Year Abroad and United Nations Semester for qualified students.

ΦBK

Chambersburg, Pennsylvania 17201

SOUTHWESTERN AT MEMPHIS

Established 1848

Memphis, Tenn. 38112

A coeducational college of the liberal arts and sciences offering tutorial instruction, independent study opportunities, and a special program in honors.

ΦBK Tennessee Gamma

TUFTS UNIVERSITY

MEDFORD, MASSACHUSETTS

Summer Session

June 26—August 4

For Bulletin write:
DIRECTOR OF SUMMER SCHOOL
Tufts University, Dept. S
Medford, Mass. 02155

UNIVERSITY OF TAMPA

A 4-yr., coed, Liberal Arts university centrally located in the City of Tampa on the Hillsborough River. Fully accredited; majors offered in 18 fields. Pre-professional training in medicine, dentistry, engineering, law. Beautiful campus. Dorms. Several new buildings. Near Gulf of Mexico.

Catalog: Director of Admissions
Dept. A, Tampa 6, Florida

AN EXPANDING ACADEMIC PROGRAM through eight schools and colleges, offering under-graduate and advanced study leading to the Bachelor and Master degree, and the Ph.D. in chemistry, physics, psychology, mathematics, English and history. Write for information.

TEXAS CHRISTIAN UNIVERSITY

Forth Worth, Texas *Since 1873*

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The Reader Replies

THE READER REPLIES *carries miscellaneous comments by readers and authors on various articles that have appeared in the magazine. All communications should be addressed to: Editor,* THE AMERICAN SCHOLAR, *1811 Q Street, N.W., Washington, D. C. 20009. Because of space limitations we cannot guarantee to print all letters received.*
—EDITOR

Why I should add my plaudits for Daniel Bell's "Sociodicy. . . ." [AS: Autumn, 1966] is beyond my comprehension; for I have neither the wit nor the learning to comprehend, let alone to digest and criticize. To disqualify myself even further, there was a point in the reading when I felt I was enjoying one of the greatest works of pseudo intellectualism since Richard Rovere attempted to win back his former friends, not in the article cited by Mr. Bell but in his hilariously footnoted apology therefor in *Esquire.*

Despite my lack of competence and perspective (several trips to the unabridged dictionary were necessary to convince me I had enjoyed far too "chilly" a view of "chiliastic" and knew nothing of "pneumatomachian") and my nearly overwhelming admiration for Mr. Bell's essay, I must profess a slight doubt about its effects, especially concerning the matter that originally attracted me to it, its catchy title. I fear this use of sociodicy is an unfortunate perversion for one of the cleverest terms ever invented by man, the English version for Leibnitz' total denial of the prodigal son, which in English has such fine overtones of theological idiocy.

Although Mr. Bell has more than the tip of his tongue in his cheek and makes a heroic effort to save the situation with some superb definitions at the conclusion, he has not only created so great and needed a word but has done it so engagingly that I fear the term (and its suggested brethren) may come in for more current usage than any of the misnomers or halfnomers he discusses. If this occurs, he may well have given value by association to Leibnitz' self-damning term, which has so long rested in its own sterile limbo, and may once again release upon the world the idea that God is responsible for justice and man has nothing to do but enjoy Eden, knowing neither good nor evil.

JACK STONE
Evansville, Indiana

I agree with Hiram Haydn's reference [Spring, 1966] to Buckminster Fuller as "that astonishing man." Mr. Fuller has remarkable insights. I have the highest respect and admiration for Harlow Shapley, the renowned astronomer, and will not challenge his supposition (some twenty years ago) that Mr. Fuller was "the brightest man alive." But the editors at that historic and fatal meeting may have had a point in calling him "eccentric."

In his "Vision 65 Summary Lecture" (page 211 of the Spring issue), Mr. Fuller said: "The *brightest* star that we use in our navigation is Rigil Kentaurus. And Rigil Kentaurus is *four and one-half million light years away* . . . Quite probably Rigil Kentaurus hasn't been 'there' in the sky for three and one-half million years." Again, on page 212: "The nearest star Sun is ninety-two million miles away and the *next brightest* Rigil Kentaurus *is not even there.*" (Italics supplied.)

This is indeed "astonishing" to a credulous reader, when he recalls that others writing with presumed authority have assured him that our Milky Way Galaxy is only one hundred thousand light years across and the Andromeda Galaxy is about two million light years away; that Rigil Kentaurus (navigator's name for Alpha Centauri) is only *4.3 light years away* and actually is the *nearest* of all bright stars, but is *not the brightest* but the third brightest, after Sirius and Canopus, not counting our Sun.

To quote again from Mr. Haydn's editorial, "I have the shivery feeling" that much of what I have learned about the stars "may well be obsolete."

Best wishes for continued and greater success of your wonderful magazine.

JOHN M. SHEFFEY
Westfield, New Jersey

* * *

MR. FULLER replies: Mr. Sheffey's letter is a real "shocker" to me. Through a great many years I have disciplined myself never to prepare

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Wabash College

A Liberal Arts College for Men

Founded in 1832

CRAWFORDSVILLE
Indiana

Beta of Indiana, Phi Beta Kappa

WESTMINSTER COLLEGE

Fulton, Missouri

A Liberal Arts College for Men
Founded 1851

A.B. Degree
C.E.E.B. (SAT) Tests Required

WOFFORD COLLEGE

Spartanburg, South Carolina

A Liberal Arts College for Men

Established 1854

ΦBK Chapter 1940

Affiliated with the Methodist Church

lectures. I have learned that it is possible to think aloud. The system has merit, for it forces me to reassess the inventory of concepts and relationships accruing to our progressive experiences. Most of the data that I use comes from my own experimental work and I am confident of my figures. I always announce to my audiences that I am speaking without notes and therefore all data is from the memory bank. As in all conversation, unchecked concepts emerge spontaneously. The errors I made in this instance are preposterous. In dealing with astronomy the errors readily become astronomically magnified.

The only thing that can be said in my favor is that the point I was making would have been equally substantiated if I had left out the word "million" and had said only "four and one-half light years." The point I was trying to make was that of *non-simultaneity* of the events witnessed in the sky. If I had left out the "million" I would not have gone on with the afterthought that the star probably had not been there for three and one-half million years. Checking back on my authorities, I find that—at least—I was right that a star of such magnitude does tend to burn out in a million years.

I am not even an amateur astronomer, although I read a great deal reported by the astronomers. As I am a sailor and navigator, I know Mr. Sheffey is extraordinarily right about Sirius being the brightest star next to the Sun. There are times and ship positions when Rigil Kentaurus is the brightest to be seen.

My talks are tape-recorded and transcribed. I then try to convert the spoken pattern into visually acceptable syntax. In the case of THE AMERICAN SCHOLAR article, I went to Africa before the transcription clean-up phase. If I had had time I would have made a thorough check of the data. Also, I had a very short time to work with galley proof and I tried not to upset the format and line content any more than necessary. The only consolation I can find is that I have not been inundated with notices of other glaring misstatements consequent to faults in my method of communication processing.

My deep apology to the Board of Editors and to all of the SCHOLAR's readers. While eager to make amends for the erroneous quantities employed in my address, I hope it is clear to all that the fundamental meanings are not altered.

* * *

When I read August Heckscher's article on Vietnam in the Autumn issue, I could not help thinking of La Fontaine's fable, *"Le Coche et la Mouche."* A second reading did not soften my judgment. I heartily agree therefore with Joseph Bowen's letter in the Winter issue.

Unfortunately, those who undermine our country's policy will continue to delay negotiations, cause needless casualties on both sides and make the achievement of peace more difficult, always, of course, in the names of democracy, the Constitution and humanitarianism. I believe that everyone in the United States is in favor of our getting out of Vietnam; the only problem (and it is a baffling one) is how to do it.

ANDREW L. MATTE
Summit, New Jersey

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

BOLLINGEN SERIES SPRING 1967

THE MUQADDIMAH
An Introduction to History. By IBN KHALDÛN. Translated from the Arabic, with an introduction, by FRANZ ROSENTHAL. A revised edition of the work by the 14th-century Islamic scholar which A. J. Toynbee has called "the most comprehensive and illuminating analysis of how human affairs work that has been made anywhere up to date." 22 illustrations. 3 vols., boxed. $18.50

NICOLAS POUSSIN
The A. W. Mellon Lectures in the Fine Arts, 1958. By ANTHONY BLUNT. A comprehensive account of Poussin's life and development and his theory of art. Illustrated with 265 plates, giving the corpus of Poussin's paintings, and 271 comparative subjects. 2 vols., 9" x 12", boxed. $25.00

THE PORTRAIT IN THE RENAISSANCE
The A. W. Mellon Lectures in the Fine Arts, 1963. By JOHN POPE-HENNESSY. Two centuries of experiment and development in portraiture, from the great Florentine fresco cycles through the masters of the High Renaissance. 330 halftones. $12.50

ELEUSIS: ARCHETYPAL IMAGE OF MOTHER AND DAUGHTER
Archetypal Images in Greek Religion, Volume 4. By C. KERÉNYI. Translated from the German by Ralph Manheim. A reconstruction of the Eleusinian Mysteries through the study of archaeology, objects of art, and religious history. 80 illustrations in halftone and line. $5.00

THE SPIRIT IN MAN, ART, AND LITERATURE
Volume 15 of the Collected Works of C. G. Jung. Edited by GERHARD ADLER, MICHAEL FORDHAM, and HERBERT READ. Translated from the German by R. F. C. Hull. Nine essays on the qualities of personality found in the creative spirit. $4.50

Two new editions of volumes previously issued in the Collected Works of C. G. Jung

SYMBOLS OF TRANSFORMATION
Volume 5. A complete revision of *Psychology of the Unconscious,* Jung's first important statement of his independent position. 2nd edition. 65 plates, 43 text figures. $5.00

TWO ESSAYS ON ANALYTICAL PSYCHOLOGY
Volume 7. "New Paths in Psychology" (1912) and "The Structure of the Unconscious" (1916), in a revised translation, with the newly discovered original texts included in an appendix. $4.50

Please order from your bookstore. Published by Bollingen Foundation. Distributed by Pantheon Books, 22 East 51st St., New York City 10022. For detailed catalogue, write to Bollingen Series, 140 East 62nd St., New York City 10021.

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Yale University Press
New Haven and London

in Canada: McGill University Press

available through your bookstore ■

The Papers of Benjamin Franklin

Volume 10: January 1, 1762, through December 31, 1763

edited by Leonard W. Labaree

In the summer of 1762 Franklin wound up his business in England as agent for the Pennsylvania Assembly and returned to Philadelphia. His correspondence with friends made in England reflects some nostalgia for his life there, and their letters brought political news and gossip from London. "The publication pace of the 'Papers of Benjamin Franklin' reflects handsomely upon those scholars engaged in the project."—**Chicago Tribune.**

Volumes 1-10 **$12.50 each**

The Fabric of Paul Tillich's Theology

by David H. Kelsey

By taking seriously Tillich's claim to be a confessional Church theologian rather than a metaphysician with religious interests, this carefully ordered study gains a fresh perspective on the structure of argument upon which his theological enterprise rests. **$6.00**

The Modern Confessional Novel

by Peter M. Axthelm

New insights into works by seven important novelists are provided by this stimulating examination of a uniquely modern literary genre. The author discusses works by Dostoevsky, Gide, Sartre, Camus, Koestler, Golding, and Bellow. **$5.75**

Jefferson and France

by Lawrence S. Kaplan

Examines in detail what many consider the focal point of early American diplomatic history: the changing relations between Thomas Jefferson and France. The findings include the provocative notion that Jefferson's so-called Francophilism was in reality a subtle integrating of his idea of democracy with his sharper awareness of America's goals and interests. **$5.75**

Now in paperbound

Proverty amid Affluence

edited by Leo Fishman

"Must reading for all social workers, economics teachers, politicians and political leaders, sociologists, and Americans seriously interested in the so-called 'war on poverty.' "—**Publishers' Weekly.**

$1.95 (cloth **$6.00**)

LICENSED TO UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED